



974.4  
L 58.

THE  
HISTORY OF LYNN,

INCLUDING

NAHANT.

BY ALONZO LEWIS,—THE LYNN BARD.

These hills, where once the Indian dwelt,  
These plains, o'er which the red deer ran,  
These shores, where oft our fathers knelt,  
And wild doves built, unscared by man,  
I love them well — for they, to me,  
Are as some pleasant memory.

---

Second Edition.

---

222405

BOSTON:  
PRINTED BY SAMUEL N. DICKINSON.

1844.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1844,  
By ALONZO LEWIS,  
in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the District of Massachusetts.

No local history has been published in America, which has been more highly praised by the public journals, or more eagerly read, than the History of Lynn in the first edition. It was one great means of inducing that taste for historical reading, which has eventuated in the production of so many town histories, and other works of a more extensive nature. A few extracts from these notices are here given.

*History of Lynn.* We have just risen from the perusal of a work under this title, from the press of Mr. John H. Eastburn. The author is Mr. Alonzo Lewis, who compiled and published the very handsome Map of Lynn and Nahant, we not long since had occasion to notice. He is a gentleman of enviable talents, uniting the rarely combined qualities of a brilliant fancy with a love of philosophical inquiry and deep research.

*Traveller.*

Mr. Lewis is favorably known as a poet of chaste and delicate fancy, and his remarks in the pages before us show an alertness to the beautiful highly creditable to him as a writer.

*Statesman.*

The writer has not confined himself to the dry details of his subject, but has favored us with glimpses of the domestic and literary occupations of our ancestors. These town histories will be of great service to the future historian, who will look to them as the principal sources from which his information is to be derived.

*Advertiser.*

The Introduction is one of the most felicitous and best written productions which I have ever seen annexed to any work of the kind. My love and esteem for the author of such sentiments have been much increased since I read it, which has been more than once. The History is all that could be expected or even desired.

*John Farmer.*

The author, Alonzo Lewis, Esq., has given a mass of interesting facts and occurrences of olden time, furnishing a curious compendium, not only to antiquaries and the immediate descendants of the first settlers of that place, but to readers of every class and section of the country.

*Traveller's Guide.*

As a prose writer, Mr. Lewis is conspicuously eminent; and were he more voluminous, he might be styled with justice, the Southey of America. *Hartford Pearl.*

We trust that every town of the old settlements will soon have its historian, like the accomplished Lewis of Lynn.

*New York Star.*





## INTRODUCTION.

---

This will be manifest while people live,  
The number of their descendants will value it.

THE VOLUSPA, A RUNIC POEM.



T the time when I began to collect the facts of which the following pages are composed, very little was known of the early history of Lynn. It had not even been ascertained in what year the town was settled — the records for the first sixty-two years were wholly wanting — and the names of the early settlers were unknown.

It has been said, that the town records were burnt about the year 1690 ; but that they were in existence long after that period, is evident from an order respecting them, on the seventh of March, 1715, when the inhabitants voted ; ‘that whereas some of the old town records are much shattered, therefore so much shall be transcribed out of one or more of them, into another book, as the selectmen shall think best . . . and the selectmen having perused two of the old town books, and find that the second book is most shattered, and that the oldest book may be kept fare to reed severall years, think it best and order, that soe much shall be transcribed.’ A few pages were thus copied, and the books were afterward destroyed or lost. In my researches, I found several volumes of the old records of births,

marriages, and deaths, commencing in 1675, in a very ruinous condition, and caused them to be bound and furnished with an index. The earliest record of the proceedings of the town, now in existence, commences in the year 1691; and the earliest parish record, in 1722.

I have examined every attainable source of information, to supply the deficiencies of the lost records. I have discovered numerous ancient manuscripts; and among them, a copy of three pages of the old town records for 1638, and several in subsequent years, which providentially happened to be the pages most wanted; I have also found a journal, kept daily for forty-four years, by Mr. Zaccheus Collins; and another, for twenty years, by Mr. Richard Pratt; in which they appear to have noticed every thing remarkable during those long periods, and from which I have extracted many interesting particulars. I have transcribed from the records of state and county, as well as from those of town and parish; and from numerous files of unpublished papers. Indeed I have spared neither labor nor expense to make this history complete. Not only have numerous volumes concerning early discoveries and settlements in America been consulted, but the manuscript records of parishes in Great Britain, and other European nations, have been explored. It would have been quite as easy, in most instances, to have conveyed the ideas in my own words; but as I was delighted with the quaintness and simplicity of the original language, I thought that perhaps others might be equally pleased. Moreover, I like to hear people tell their own stories. Some historians have strangely distorted facts by changing the language.

The records and files of our State government furnish much information respecting our early history; but as they existed when I began my researches, a vast amount of patience was requisite to obtain it. Those papers were then tied up in hundreds of small bundles, and many of them bore the impress of the mob by whom they were trampled, in 1765. At my sugges-

tion, they have been arranged in volumes and furnished with an index; so that future historians will be spared much labor to which I was subjected. The papers in other public offices, and particularly those of the Essex Court, at Salem, merit a similar attention. People yet have too little veneration for their ancestors, and too little love for their country, or it would have been done long ago. The Massachusetts Historical Society, at Boston, merit unbounded gratitude, for the care with which they have preserved rare historical books and valuable manuscripts.

I have given the names of more than three hundred of the early settlers, with short sketches of the lives of many. I have also collected the names of many Indians and their Sagamores, the fragments of whose history have become so interesting. This is the first attempt, in any town, to collect the names of all the early settlers, with those of the Indians who were cotemporary with them. I trust that no person who is an inhabitant of Lynn, or interested in the details of antiquity, will think that I have been too particular. A proper attention to dates and minuteness of circumstance, constitutes the charm of history, and the actions and manners of men can never cease to be interesting.

There is something so natural in inquiring into the history of those who have lived before us, and particularly of those with whom we have any connection, either by the ties of relation or place, that it is surprising any one should be found by whom the subject is regarded with indifference. In a government like ours, where every man is required to take part in the management of public affairs, an acquaintance with the past is indispensable to an intelligent discharge of his duties. The knowledge of history was considered so important by the Monarch Bard of Israel, that he commenced a song of praise for its enjoyment; and the relation in which we are placed cannot render it less important and interesting to us. To trace the settlement and progress of our native town—to read the history of the play-place of our early hours, and which has been the



scene of our maturer joys—to follow the steps of our fathers through the course of centuries, and mark the gradation of improvement—to learn who and what they were from whom we are descended—and still further, to be informed of the people who were here before them, and who are now vanished like a dream of childhood—and all these in their connection with the history of the world and of man—must certainly be objects of peculiar interest to every inquisitive mind. And though, in the pursuit of these objects, we meet with much that calls forth the tear of sympathy and the expression of regret, we yet derive a high degree of pleasure from being enabled to sit with our fathers in the shade of the oaks and pines of ‘olden time,’ and hear them relate the stories of days which have gone by. One of the most useful faculties of the mind is the memory; and history enables us to treasure up the memories of those who have lived before us. What would not any curious mind give to have a complete knowledge of the Indian race?—And what a painful want should we suffer, were the history of our fathers a blank, and we could know no more of them than of the aborigines! Our existence might indeed be regarded as incomplete, if we could not command the record of past time, as well as enjoy the present, and hope for the happiness of the future! Reality must ever possess a stronger power over the minds of reasonable and reflecting men, than imagination; and though fiction frequently asserts, and sometimes acquires the ascendancy, it is generally when she appears dressed in the habiliments of probability and historical truth.

Among the pleasures of the mind, there are few which afford more unalloyed gratification, than that which arises from the remembrance of the loved and familiar objects of home, combined with the memory of the innocent delights of our childhood. This is one of the few pleasures of which the heart cannot be deprived—which the darkest shades of misfortune serve to bring out into fuller relief—and which the uninterrupted passage of the current of time tends only to polish and



to brighten. When wearied with the tumult of the world, and sick of the anxieties and sorrows of life, the thoughts may return with delight to the pleasures of childhood, and banquet unsated on the recollections of youth. Who does not remember the companions of his early years—and the mother who watched over his dangers—and the father who counselled him—and the teacher who instructed him—and the sister whose sweet voice reproved his wildness? Who does not remember the tree under which he played—and the house in which he lived—and even the moonbeam that slept upon his bed! Who has not returned, in sunlight and in sleep, to the scenes of his earliest and purest joys; and to the green and humble mounds where his sorrows have gone forth over the loved and the lost who were dear to his soul! And who does not love to indulge these remembrances, though they bring swelling tides to his heart, and tears to his eyes? And whose ideas are so limited, that he does not extend his thoughts to the days and the dwellings of his ancestors; until he seems to become a portion of the mountain and the stream, and to prolong his existence through the centuries which are passed! O, the love of Home!—it was implanted in the breast of man as a germ of hope, that should grow up into a fragrant flower, to win his heart from the ambitions and the vanities of his life, and woo him back to the innocent delights of his morning hours! Sweet Spirit of Home!—thou Guardian Angel of the Good—thou earliest, kindest, latest friend of man! how numerous are thy votaries! how many are the hearts that bow before thy sway! What tears of sorrow hast thou dried!—what tears of recollection, of anticipation, of enjoyment, hast thou caused to flow! To all bosoms thou art grateful—to all climes congenial. No heart, that is innocent, but has a temple for thee!—no mind, however depraved, but acknowledges the power which presides over thy shrine!

The advancement of the American colonies has been unparalleled in the annals of the world. Two hundred years have

scarcely circled their luminous flight over this now cultivated region, since the most populous towns of New England were a wilderness! No sound was heard in the morning but the voice of the Indian, and the notes of the wild birds, as they woke their early hymn to their Creator; and at evening, no praise went up to heaven, but the desolate howl of the wolf, and the sweet but mournful song of the muckawis.\* The wild powah† of the savage sometimes broke into the silence of nature, like the wailing for the dead; but the prayer of the Christian was never heard to ascend from the melancholy waste. The mountains, that lifted their sunny tops above the clouds, and the rivers, which for thousands of miles rolled their murmuring waters through the deserts, were unbeheld by an eye which could perceive the true majesty of God, or a heart that could frame language to his praise. At length the emigrants from England arrived, and the western shore of the Atlantic began to hear the more cheerful voices of civilization and refinement. Pleasant villages were seen in the midst of the wide wilderness; and houses for the worship of God, and schools for the instruction of children arose, where the wild beast had his lair. The men of those days were compelled to endure privations, and to overcome difficulties, which exist to us only on the page of history. In passing through the forest, if they turned from the bear, it was to meet the wolf; and if they fled from the wolf, it was to encounter the deadly spring of the insidious catamount. At some periods, the planter could not travel from one settlement to another, without the dread of being shot by the silent arrow of the unseen Indian; nor could his children pursue their sports in the shady woods, or gather berries in the green fields, without danger of treading on the coiled rattlesnake, or being

---

\* The Indian name of the whip-poor-will. The sounds which strike the ear of one familiar with the English language like the words *whip-poor-will*, fell on the tympanum of an Indian like the syllables which compose the word *muck-a-wis*.

† Powah was the designation of a priest of the red men; and their meetings for the exercise of their rude worship were also denominated powahs.

carried away by the remorseless enemy. The little hamlets, and the lonely dwellings, which rose, at long intervals, over the plains and among the forests, were frequently alarmed by the howl of the wolf and the yell of the savage; and often were their thresholds drenched in the blood of the beautiful and the innocent! The dangers of those days have passed away, with the men who sustained them, and we enjoy the fruit of their industry and peril; they have toiled, and fought, and bled for our repose. Scarcely a spot of New England can be found, which has not been fertilized by the sweat or the blood of our ancestors. How grateful should we be to that good Being who has bestowed on us the reward of their enterprise!

The day on which the Mayflower landed her passengers on the Rock of Plymouth, was a fatal one for the aborigines of America. From that day, the towns of New England began to spring up among their wigwams, and along their hunting-grounds; and though sickness, and want, and the tomahawk made frequent and fearful incursions on the little bands of the planters, yet their numbers continued to increase, till they have become a great and powerful community. It is indeed a pleasing and interesting employment, to trace the progress of the primitive colonies—for each town was in itself a little colony, a miniature republic, and the history of one is almost the history of all—to behold them contending with the storms and inclemencies of an unfriendly climate, and with the repeated depredations of a hostile and uncivilized people, till we find them emerging into a state of political prosperity, unsurpassed by any nation of the earth. But it is painful to reflect, that in the accomplishment of this great purpose, the nations of the wilderness, who constituted a separate race, have been nearly destroyed. At more than one period, the white people seem to have been in danger of extermination by the warlike and exasperated Indians; but in a few years, the independent Sassacus, and the noble Miantonimo, and the princely Pometacom, saw their once populous and powerful nations gradually wasting



away and disappearing. In vain did they sharpen their tomahawks, and point their arrows anew for the breasts of the white men!—in vain did the valiant Wampanoag despatch his trusty warriors two hundred miles across the forest, to invite the Tatarines to lend their aid in exterminating the English! The days of their prosperity had passed away. The time had come when a great people were to be driven from the place of their nativity—when the long line of Sachems, who had ruled over the wilderness for unknown ages, was to be broken, and their fires extinguished. Darkness, like that which precedes the light of morning, fell over them; and the sunrise of refinement has dawned upon another people! The pestilence had destroyed thousands of the bravest of their warriors, and left the remainder feeble and disheartened. Feuds and dissensions prevailed among their tribes; and though they made frequent depredations upon the defenceless settlements, and burnt many dwellings, and destroyed many lives, yet the emigrants soon became the ascendants in number and in power; and the feeble remnant of the red men, wearied and exhausted by unsuccessful conflicts, relinquished the long possession of their native soil, and retired into the pathless forests of the west.

Much has been written to free the white people from the charge of aggression, and much to extenuate the implacability of the Indians. We should be cautious in censuring the conduct of men, through whose energies we have received many of our dearest privileges; and they who condemn the first settlers of New England as destitute of all true principle, err as much as they who laud their conduct with indiscriminate applause. Passionate opinion and violent action were the general faults of their time; and when they saw that one principle was overstrained in its effect, they scarcely thought themselves safe until they had vacillated to the opposite extreme. Regarding themselves, like the Israelites, as a peculiar people, they imagined that they had a right, without an immediate warrant from heaven, to destroy the red men as heathen. The arms



which at first they took up with the idea that they were requisite for self-defence, were soon employed in a war of extermination; and the generous mind is grieved to think, that instead of endeavoring to conciliate the Indians by kindness, they should have deemed it expedient to determine their destruction.

The Indians had undoubtedly good cause to be jealous of the arrival of another people, and in some instances to consider themselves injured by their encroachments. Their tribes had inhabited the wilderness for ages, and the country was their *home*. Here were the scenes of their youthful sports, and here were the graves of their fathers. Here they had lived and loved, here they had warred and sung, and grown old with the hills and rocks. Here they had pursued the deer — not those ‘formed of clouds,’ like the poetical creations of Ossian — but the red, beautiful, fleet-footed creatures of the wilderness. Over the glad waters that encircle Nahant, they had bounded in their birch canoes; and in the streams, and along the sandy shore, they had spread their nets to gather the treasures of the deep. Their daughters did not adjust their locks before pier glasses, nor copy beautiful stanzas into gilt albums; but they saw their graceful forms reflected in the clear waters, and their poetry was written in living characters on the green hills, and the silver beach, and the black rocks of Nahant. Their brave sachems wore not the glittering epaulets of modern warfare, nor did the eagle banner of white men wave in their ranks; but the untamed eagle of the woods soared over their heads, and beneath their feet was the soil of freemen, which had never been sullied by the foot of a *slave*!

The red men were indeed cruel and implacable in their revenge; and if history be true, so have white men been in all ages. I know of no cruelty practised by Indians, which white men have not even exceeded in their refinements of torture. The delineation of Indian barbarities presents awful pictures of blood; but it should be remembered that those cruelties were committed at a time when the murder of six or eight hundred of

the red people, sleeping around their own fires, in the silent repose of night, was deemed a meritorious service! In resisting to the last, they fought for their country, for freedom, for life—they contended for the safety and happiness of their wives and children; for all that brave and high-minded men can hold dear! But they were subdued; and the few who were not either killed or made prisoners, sought refuge in the darker recesses of their native woods. The ocean, in which they had so often bathed their athletic limbs, and the streams which had yielded their bountiful supplies of fish, were abandoned in silent grief; and the free and fearless Indian, who once wandered in all the pride of unsubdued nature, over our fields and among our forests, was driven from his home, and compelled to look with regret to the shores of the sea, and the pleasant abodes of his youth!

A few, indeed, continued for some years to linger around the shores of their ancient habitations; but they were like the spirits whom the Bard of Morven has described, 'sighing in the wind around the dwellings of their former greatness!' They are gone; and over the greater part of New England the voice of the Indian is heard no more. That they were originally a noble race, is shown by the grandeur of their language, and by their mellifluous and highly poetical names of places—the yet proud appellations of many of our mountains, lakes, and rivers. It would have been gratifying to the lover of nature, if all the Indian names of places had been preserved, for they all had a meaning, applicable to scenery or event. 'Change not barbarous names,' said the Persian sage, 'for they are given of God, and have inexpressible efficacy.' The names of Saugus, Swampscot, and Nahant remain; and may they continue to remain, the imperishable memorials of a race which has long since passed away.

In contemplating the destruction of a great people, the reflecting mind is naturally disposed to inquire into the causes of their decay, in order to educe motives for a better conduct, that their



wrongs may be in some degree repaired, and a similar fate avoided. If dissension weakened the power of the tribes of the forest, why should it not impair the energies of our free States? If the red men have fallen through the neglect of moral and religious improvement, to make way for a more refined state of society, and the emanations of a purer worship, how great is the reason to fear that we also may be suffered to wander in our own ways, because we will not know the ways of God, and to fall into doubt, disunion, and strife, till our country shall be given to others, as it has been given to us. He who took the sceptre from the most illustrious and powerful of ancient nations, and caused the tide of their prosperity and refinement to flow back and stagnate in the pools of ignorance, obscurity, and servitude, possesses ample means to humble the pride of any nation, when it shall cease to be guided by his counsels. Already have evils of the most alarming consequences passed far on their march of desolation. Already has the Spirit of Discord, with his dark shadow, dimmed the brightness of our great council fire! Already has the fondness for strong drink seized on thousands of our people, bringing the young to untimely graves, sapping the foundations of health and moral excellence, and pulling down the glory of our country. Already has a disregard for the Sabbath, and for divine institutions, begun openly to manifest itself; the concomitant of infidelity, and the harbinger of spiritual ruin. If we may trust the appearances in our western regions, our land was once inhabited by civilized men, who must have disappeared long before the arrival of our fathers. May Heaven avert their destiny from us, to evince to the world how virtuous a people may be, on whom the blessing of civil liberty has fallen as an inheritance.

The political system of our nation is probably the best which was ever devised by man for the common good; but it practically embraces one evil too obvious to be disregarded. While it advances the principle that all men have by nature the same civil rights, it retains, with strange inconsistency, one sixth of

the whole population in a state of abject bodily and mental servitude. On its own principles, our government has no right to enslave any portion of its subjects; and I am constrained, in the name of God and truth to say, that they must be free. Christianity and political expediency both demand their emancipation, nor will they always remain unheard. Many generous minds are already convinced of the importance of attention to this subject; and many more might speak in its behalf, in places where they could not be disregarded. Where are the ministers of our holy religion, that their prayers are not preferred for the liberation and enlightenment of men with souls as immortal as their own? Where are the senators and representatives of our free States, that their voices are not heard in behalf of that most injured race? Let all who have talents, and power, and influence, exert them to free the slaves from their wrongs, and raise them to the rank and privileges of men. That the black people possess mental powers capable of extensive cultivation, has been sufficiently evinced; and the period may arrive when the lights of freedom and science shall shine much more extensively on these dark children of bondage—when the knowledge of the true faith shall awaken the nobler principles of their minds, and its practice place them in moral excellence far above those who are now trampling them in the dust. How will the spirit of regret then sadden over the brightness of our country's fame, when the muse of History shall lead their pens to trace the annals of their ancestors, and the inspiration of Poetry instruct their youthful bards to sing the oppression of their fathers in the land of Freedom!

I trust the time will come, when on the annals of our country shall be inscribed the abolition of slavery—when the inhuman custom of war shall be viewed with abhorrence—when humanity shall no longer be outraged by the exhibition of capital punishments—when the one great principle of LOVE shall pervade all classes—when the poor shall be furnished with employment and ample remuneration—when men shall unite their



exertions for the promotion of those plans which embrace the welfare of the whole — that the unqualified approbation of Heaven may be secured to our country, and ‘that glory may dwell in our land.’

In delineating the annals of a single town, it can scarcely be expected that so good an opportunity will be afforded for variety of description and diffusiveness of remark, as in a work of a more general nature. It is also proper to observe, that this compilation was begun without any view to publication; but simply to gratify that natural curiosity which must arise in the mind of every one who extends his thoughts beyond the persons and incidents which immediately surround him. I may, however, be permitted to hope, that an attempt to delineate with accuracy the principal events which have transpired within my native town, for the space of two hundred years, will be interesting to many, though presented without any endeavor to adorn them with the graces of artificial ornament. My endeavor has been to ascertain facts, and to state them correctly. I have preferred the form of annals for a local history; for thus every thing is found in its time and place. The labor and expense of making so small a book has been immense, and can never be appreciated by the reader, until he shall undertake to write a faithful history of one of our early towns, after its records have been lost. I could have written many volumes of romance or of general history, while preparing this volume; and I have endeavored to make it so complete, as to leave little for those who come after me, except to continue the work.

It should be remembered, that previous to the change of the style, in 1752, the year began in March; consequently February was the twelfth month. Ten days also are to be added to the date in the sixteenth century, and eleven in the seventeenth, to bring the dates to the present style. Thus, ‘12 mo. 25, 1629,’ instead of being Christmas day, as some might suppose, would be March 8th, 1630. In the following pages, I have corrected

the years and months, excepting when they are marked in quotations; but I have left the days untouched.

I have the genealogies of many of the early settlers, complete to the present time; but to publish them all, would require another volume. The descendants of such, who are desirous of preserving their lineage, can have the lists of their ancestors by application to me.

The history of Nahant is so intimately connected with that of the town, that I have continued them together; but by referring to the index, the reader may readily trace out all which relates to that celebrated watering place. A topographical, historical, and geological Map of Lynn and Nahant, has been prepared from my own survey, which will be immediately published.

ALONZO LEWIS.

# HISTORY OF LYNN.

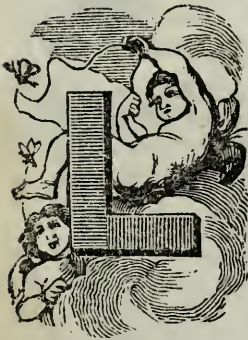
---

## CHAPTER I.

Situation of Lynn—Its picturesque beauty—Indian name of the town, Saugus—Abousett River—Nahant—Swallows' Cave—Pea Island—Shag Rocks—Irene's Grotto—Pulpit Rock—Natural Bridge—Cauldron Cliff—Castle Rock—Spouting Horn—Iron Mine—John's Peril—Egg Rock—Little Nahant—Beaches—Swampscot—High Rock—Lover's Leap—Lakes of Lynn—Springs—Geology—Botany—Phenomena—Storm at Nahant.

One showed an iron coast and angry waves,  
You seemed to hear them climb and fall,  
And roar rock-thwarted under bellowing caves.

TENNYSON.



LYNN is pleasantly situated on the northern shore of Massachusetts Bay, between the cities of Salem and Boston. It extends six miles on the sea shore, and five miles into the woods. The southern portion of the town is a long narrow prairie, defended on the north by a chain of high rocky hills, beyond which is an extensive range of woodland. It is surrounded by abundance of water; having the river of Saugus on the west, the Harbor on the south, the Ocean on the southeast, and the Lakes of Lynn on the north. From the centre of the southern side, a beach of sand extends two miles into the ocean; at the end of which are the two peninsular islands called 'the Nahants.' This beach forms one side of the harbor, and protects it from the ocean. When great storms beat on this beach, and on the cliffs of Nahant, they make a roaring which may be heard six miles.

Lynn is emphatically a region of romance and beauty. Her wide-spread and variegated shores—her extended beaches—her beautiful Nahant—her craggy cliffs, that overhang the sea—her hills of porphyry—her woodland lakes—her wild secluded vales—her lovely groves, where sings the whip-poor-



will, furnish fruitful themes for inexhaustible description; while the legends of her forest kings and their vast tribes — ‘their feather-cinctured chiefs and dusky loves’ will be rich themes of song a hundred ages hence.

Lynn, as it now exists, is much smaller than it was before the towns of Saugus, Lynnfield, Reading, and South Reading were separated from it. It is now bounded on the west by Saugus, on the northwest by Lynnfield, on the north and east by Danvers and Salem. The old County road passes through the northern part, the Salem Turnpike through the centre, and the Rail-road from Portland to Boston through the southern part. The distance to Salem, on the northeast, is five miles; to Boston, on the southwest, nine miles. It contains 9360 acres, or fourteen square miles; and the boundary line measures thirty-four miles. It presents a bold and rocky shore, consisting of craggy and precipitous cliffs, interspersed with numerous bays, coves and beaches, which furnish a pleasing and picturesque variety.



Above these rise little verdant mounds and lofty barren rocks, and high hills clothed with woods of evergreen. The first settlers found the town, including Nahant, chiefly covered by forests of aged trees, which had never been disturbed but by the storms of centuries. On the tops of ancient oaks, which grew upon the cliffs, the eagles built their nests; the wild-cat and the bear rested in their branches; and the fox and the wolf prowled beneath. The squirrel made his home undisturbed in

the nut-tree; the wood pigeon murmured his sweet notes in the glen; and the beaver constructed his dam across the wild brook. The ponds and streams were filled with fish; and the harbor was covered by sea-fowl, which laid their eggs on the cliffs and on the sands of the beach.

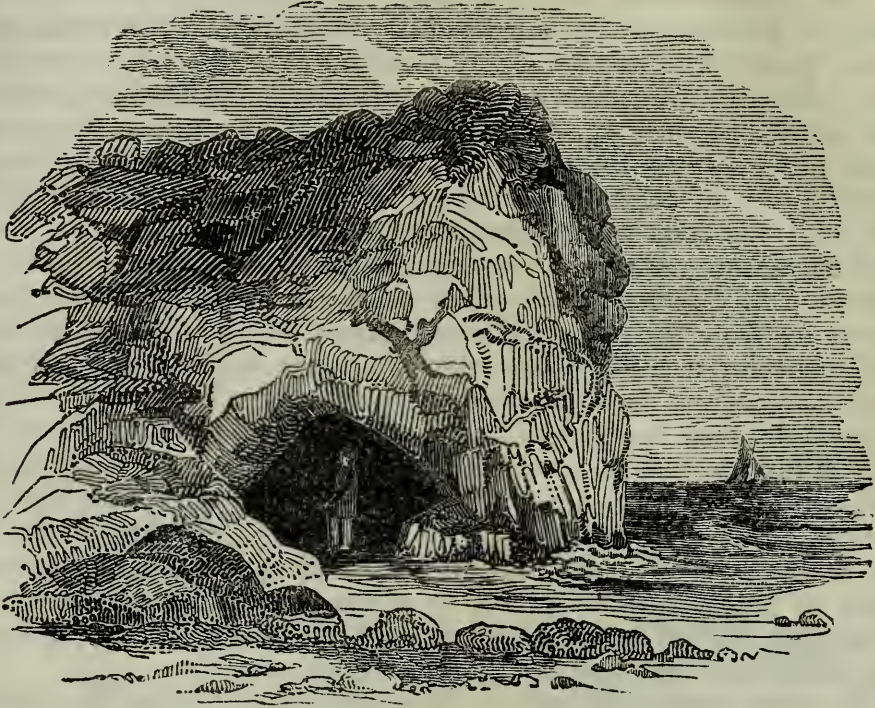
The Indian name of the town was SAUGUS; and by that name it was known for eight years. The root of this word signifies *great* or *extended*; and it was probably applied to the Long Beach. Wood, in his early Map of New England, places the word 'Sagus' on Sagamore Hill. The river on the west was called by the Indians '*Abousett*' — the word Saugus being applied to it by the white men. It was called the river *at* Saugus, and the river *of* Saugus, and finally the Saugus river; the original name '*Abousett*' being lost, until I had the pleasure of restoring it. This river has its source in Reading pond, about ten miles from the sea. For the first half of its course, it is only sufficient for a mill stream, but becomes broader towards its mouth, where it is more than a quarter of a mile wide. It is crossed by four bridges — that at the ironworks being about 60 feet in length, that on the old Boston road about two hundred feet, on the Turnpike 480 feet, and on the Rail-road 1550 feet in length. It is very crooked in its course, flowing three miles in the distance of one. In several places, after making a circuitous route of half a mile, it returns to within a few rods of the place whence it deviated. The harbor, into which it flows, is spacious, but shoal, and does not easily admit large vessels.

NAHANT is the original name of the peninsula on the south of Lynn, which has become so celebrated. This is probably the Indian term *Nahanteu*, a dual word, signifying two united, or twins. This name is peculiarly appropriate, and is an instance of the felicity of Indian appellations; for the two islands, like the Siamese twins, are not only connected together by the short beach, but both are chained to the main land by the long beach. When the early settlers spoke of the larger promontory, they called it Nahant; but more commonly after the manner of the Indians, who talked of both together, as twin brothers, they called them 'the Nahants.'

Great Nahant is two miles in length, and about half a mile in breadth, containing five hundred acres; and is six and one quarter miles in circumference. It is surrounded by steep, craggy cliffs, rising from twenty to sixty feet above the tide, with a considerable depth of water below. The rocks present a great variety of color — white, green, blue, red, purple, and gray — and in some places very black and shining, having the appearance of iron. The cliffs are pierced by many deep fissures, caverns, and grottoes; and between these are numerous coves, and beaches of fine, shining, silvery sand, crowned by ridges of va-



rious colored pebbles, interspersed with sea-shells. Above the cliffs, the promontory swells into mounds from sixty to ninety feet in height. There are many remarkable cliffs and caves around Nahant, which are very interesting to the lovers of natural curiosities.



SWALLOWS' CAVE.

The swallows' cave is a passage beneath a high cliff, on the southeastern part of Nahant. The entrance is eight feet high and ten wide. Inside, it is fourteen feet wide, and nearly twenty feet in height. Toward the centre it becomes narrower, and, at the distance of seventy-two feet, opens into the sea. It may be entered about half tide, and passing through, you may ascend to the height above, without returning through the cave. At high tide the water rushes through with great fury. The swallows formerly inhabited this cave in great numbers, and built their nests on the irregularities of the rock above, but the multitude of visitors have frightened them mostly away.

In delineating this delightful cavern, many a vision of early romance rises lovelily before me,

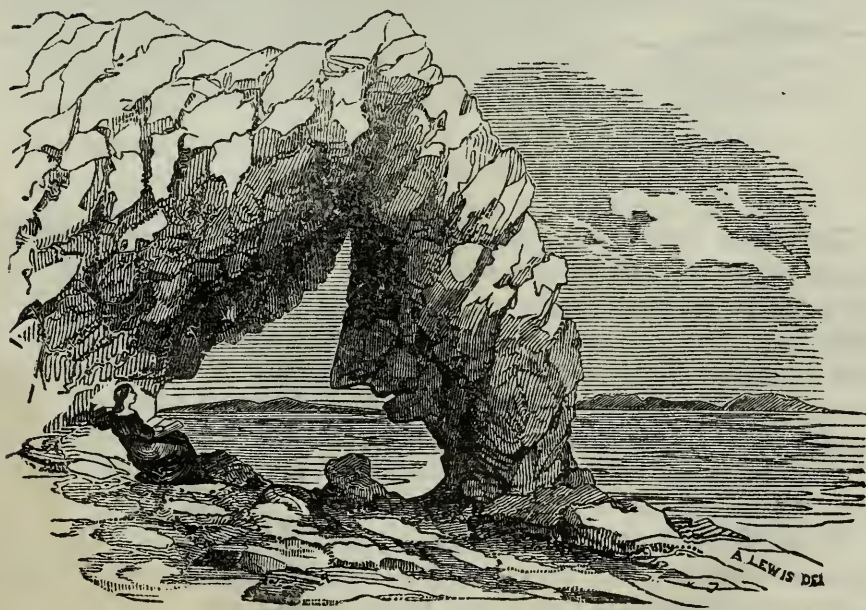
And presses forward to be in my song,  
But must not now.—

It is not allowable for a serious historian to indulge in discursions of fancy, else might I record many a legend of love and

constancy, which has been transmitted down from the olden time, in connexion with this rude and romantic scenery. Here came the Indian maid, in all her artlessness of beauty, to lave her limbs in the enamored water. Here came Wenuchus and Yawata, and other daughters of the forest, to indulge the gushings of their love; which they had learned, not in the pages of Burns or Byron, but in God's beautiful book of the unsophisticated human heart. Here too, the cliffs, now washed by the pure waves, and dried by many a summer sun, have been purpled by the blood of human slaughter; and perhaps this very cavern has sheltered some Indian mother or daughter from the tomahawk of the remorseless foe of her nation. Here also, in later times, have lovers pledged their warm and fond affections — happy if the succeeding realities of life have not frustrated the vision of happiness here formed.

Southward from the Swallows' Cave is Pea Island, an irregular rock, about twenty rods broad. It has some soil on it, on which the sea pea grows. It is united to the Swallows' Cliff by a little isthmus, or beach of sand, thirteen rods long.

Eastward from Pea Island are two long, low, black ledges, lying in the water, and covered at high tides, called the Shag Rocks. Several vessels have been wrecked on them.

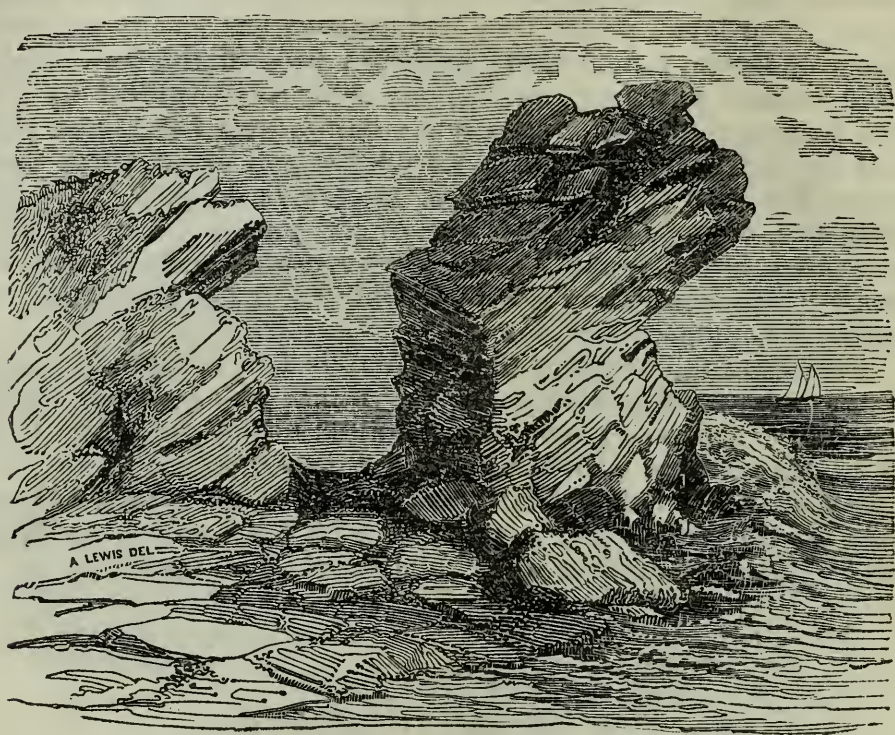


IRENE'S GROTTO.

Passing from the Swallows' Cave along the rocks, near the edge of the water, to the western side of the same cliff, you come to Irene's Grotto — a tall arch, singularly grotesque and



beautiful, leading to a large room in the rock. This is one of the greatest curiosities on Nahant, and was formerly much more so until sacrilegious hands broke down part of the roof above, to obtain stone for building.



PULPIT ROCK.

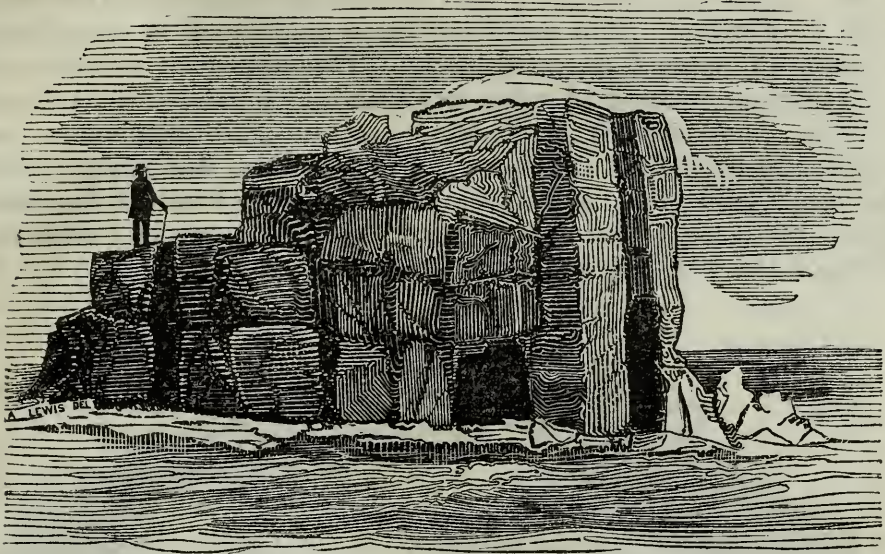
Eastward from Swallows' Cave is Pulpit Rock — a vast block about thirty feet in height, and nearly twenty feet square, standing boldly out in the tide. On the top is an opening, forming a seat; but from the steepness of the rock on all sides, it is difficult of access. The upper portion of the rock has a striking resemblance to a pile of great books. This rock is so peculiarly unique in its situation and character, that if drawings were made of it from three sides, they would scarcely be supposed to represent the same object.

The Natural Bridge is near Pulpit Rock. It is a portion of the cliff forming an arch across a deep gorge, from which you look down upon the rocks and tide, twenty feet below.

Near East Point is a great gorge, overhung by a precipice on either side, called the Cauldron Cliff; in which, especially during great storms, the water boils with tremendous force and fury. On the right of this, descending another way, is the Roaring Cavern; having an aperture beneath the rock, through which you hear the roaring of the Cauldron Cliff.



On the northeastern side of Nahant, at the extremity of Cedar Point, is Castle Rock, an immense pile, bearing a strong resemblance to the ruins of an old castle. The battlements and buttresses are strongly outlined; and the square openings in the sides, especially when thrown into deep shadow, appear like doors, windows, and embrasures. Indeed the whole of Nahant has the appearance of a strongly fortified place.



CASTLE ROCK.

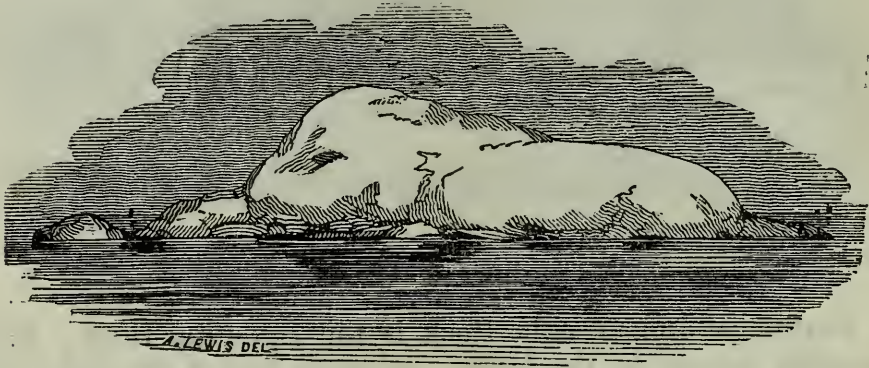
Northwest from Castle Rock is the Spouting Horn. It is a winding fissure in the lower projecting bed of the cliff, in the form of a horn, passing into a deep cavern under the rock. The water is driven through a tunnel, formed by two walls of rock, about one hundred feet, and is then forced into the cavern, from which it is spouted, with great violence, in foam and spray. In a great easterly storm, at half flood, when the tide is coming in with all its power, the water is driven into this opening with a force that seems to jar the foundation of the solid rock; and each wave makes a sound like subterranean thunder. The cliff rises abruptly forty feet above, but there is a good descent to the mouth of the tunnel.

Westward from the Spouting Horn is a large black ledge, called the Iron Mine, from its great resemblance to that mineral. It embraces a singular cavity, called the Dashing Rock.

At the Northwestern extremity of Nahant, is John's Peril, a vast fissure in the cliff, forty feet perpendicular. It received its name from the following anecdote: John Breed, one of the early inhabitants of Nahant, one day attempted to drive his team between a rock on the hill and this cliff. The passage being nar-

row, and finding his team in great peril, he hastily unfastened his oxen; and the cart, falling down the precipice, was dashed in pieces on the rocks below.

Directly in front of Nahant, at the distance of three-fourths of a mile on the east, is Egg Rock. It rises abruptly from the sea, eighty-six feet in height. Its shape is oval, being forty-five rods in length, and twelve in breadth, containing about three acres. Near the summit is half an acre of excellent soil covered with rank grass. The gulls lay their eggs here in abundance, whence the rock derives its name. The approach to this rock is dangerous, except in calm weather, and there is but one good landing place, which is on the western side. Its shape and colors are highly picturesque. Viewed from the north, it has the semblance of a couchant lion, lying out in front of the town, to protect it from the approach of a foreign enemy — meet emblem of the spirit which slumbers on our shores!



EGG ROCK.

South of Nahant is a dangerous rock, covered at high tide, called Sunk Rock. On the western side, at the entrance of the harbor, is a cluster of rocks, called the Lobster Rocks.

*Little Nahant* is one hundred and forty rods long, and seventy broad, containing forty acres. It is a hill, consisting of two graceful elevations, rising eighty feet above the sea, and defended by great battlements of rock, from twenty to sixty feet in height. On the southern side are two deep gorges, called the Great and Little Furnace. Between these is Mary's Grotto, a spacious room, twenty-four feet square, and twenty in height, opening into the sea. It was formerly completely roofed by a great arched rock; but some of those persons who have no veneration for the sublime works of Nature, have broken down a large portion of it. On the north side of *Little Nahant* is a fissure called the Wolf's Cave.



Little Nahant is connected to Great Nahant by Nahant Beach, which is somewhat more than half a mile in length, of great smoothness and beauty.

*Lynn Beach*, which connects the Nahants to the main land, is two miles in length on the eastern side, and two and a half miles on the western. It is an isthmus, or causeway, of fine shining, gray sand, forming a curve, and rising so high in the centre as generally to prevent the tide from passing over. On the western side it slopes to the harbor, and on the eastern side to the ocean. The ocean side is most beautiful, as here the tide flows out about thirty-three rods, leaving a smooth polished surface of compact sand, so hard that the horse's hoof scarcely makes a print, and the wheel passes without sound. It frequently retains sufficient lustre after the tide has left it, to give it the appearance of a mirror; and on a cloudy day, the traveller may see the perfect image of his horse reflected beneath, with the clouds below, and can easily imagine himself to be passing, like a spirit, through a world of shadows — a brightly mirrored emblem of his real existence!

It is difficult — perhaps impossible, to convey to the mind of a reader who has never witnessed the prospect, an idea of the beauty and sublimity of this beach, and of the absolute magnificence of the surrounding scenery. A floor of sand, two miles in length, and more than nine hundred feet in breadth, at low tide, bounded on two sides by the water and the sky, and presenting a surface so extensive that two millions of people might stand upon it, is certainly a view which the universe cannot parallel. This beach is composed of movable particles of sand, so small that two thousand of them would not make a grain as large as the head of a pin; yet these movable atoms have withstood the whole immense power of the Atlantic ocean for centuries — perhaps from the creation!

There are five beaches on the shores of Lynn, and sixteen around Nahant. The names of these, beginning at the east, are Phillips' — Whale — Swampscot — Humfrey's — Lynn — Nahant — Stoney — Bass — Canoe — Bathing — Pea Island — Joseph's — Curlew — Crystal — Dorothy's — Pond — Lewis's — Coral — Reed — Johnson's — and Black Rock Beaches. These together have an extent of nine miles, and most of them are smooth and beautiful. Great quantities of kelp and rock weed are thrown upon these beaches by storms, which are gathered by the farmers for the enrichment of their lands.

*Swampscot* is the original Indian name of the fishing village at the eastern part of the town. This is a place of great natural beauty, bearing a strong resemblance to the Bay of Naples. On the west of Swampscot is a pleasant rock, called 'Black Will's Cliff,' from an Indian Sagamore who resided there. On the



east is a low and very dangerous ledge of rocks, extending into the sea, called Dread Ledge. The cliffs, coves, and beaches at Swampscot are admirably picturesque, and vie with those of Nahant in romantic beauty.

There are numerous building sites of surpassing loveliness, not only at Nahant and Swampscot, but throughout the whole town; and when a better taste in architecture shall prevail, and the town becomes as highly ornamented by art as it has been by nature, it will perhaps be surpassed by no town in the Union. I have long endeavored to introduce a style of architecture which shall be in harmony with the wild and natural beauty of the scenery — a style in which the cottages shall appear to grow out of the rocks, and to be born of the woods. In some instances I have succeeded, but most people have been too busy in other occupations to study a cultivated and harmonizing taste. When a style of rural refinement shall prevail — when the hills and cliffs shall be adorned with buildings in accordance with the scenery around — and when men, instead of cutting down every tree and shrub, shall re-clothe nature with the drapery of her appropriate foliage, Lynn will appear much more lovely and interesting than at present.

The eminences in different parts of the town, furnish a great variety of pleasing prospects. High Rock, near the centre of the town, is an abrupt cliff, one hundred and seventy feet in height. The view from this rock is very extensive and beautiful. On the east is the pleasant village of Swampscot, with its cluster of slender masts, and its beach covered with boats — Baker's Island with its light — the white towers of Marblehead — and the distant headland of Cape Ann. On the right is Bunker Hill, with its obelisk of granite — the majestic dome, and the lofty spires of Boston — the beautiful green islands, with the forts and light houses in the bay — and far beyond, the Blue Hills, softly mingling with sky. On the north is a vast range of hill and forest, above which rises the misty summit of Wachusett. Before you is the town of Lynn, with its white houses and green trees — the rail-road cars gliding as if by magic across the landscape — the Long Beach, stretching out in its beauty — the dark rocks of Nahant, crowned with romantic cottages — Egg Rock in its solitary dignity — and the vast ocean, spreading out in its interminable grandeur. There too may be seen a hundred dories of the fishermen, skimming lightly on the waves — the Swampscot jiggers, bounding like sea birds over the billows — a hundred ships ploughing the deep waters — and the mighty steamers wending their way to and from England. The whole is a splendid panorama of the magnificent Bay of Massachusetts!

Lover's Leap is a beautiful and romantic elevation, one mile northwest from High Rock. It is a steep cliff, on the side of a

hill clothed with wood, one hundred and thirty-three feet in height—that is, thirty-three feet to the base of the hill, and one hundred feet above. It furnishes a pleasant view of a large portion of the town.

Pine Hill is half a mile West from Lover's Leap. It is two hundred and twenty-four feet in height. The southwestern extremity of this hill is called Sadler's Rock, which is one hundred and sixty-six feet high. A small distance northward of this, is a cliff, by the road side, which was struck by lightning in 1807, when a portion of the rock, about six tons weight, was split off, and thrown nearly two hundred feet; the bolt leaving its deep traces down the side of the rock. A few rods beyond, where the road is crossed by a brook, is a flat rock, in which is impressed the print of a cloven foot, apparently that of a cow or moose. A stone, lying near, bears the deep impress of a child's feet.

Sagamore Hill is a very pleasant eminence at the northern end of the Long Beach, sixty-six feet in height. It slopes to the harbor on one side, and to the ocean on the other, and has the town lying beautifully in the back ground. Half a mile eastward is Red Rock, which forms a very pretty little promontory in the ocean. Many spots in the hills and forests of Lynn are beautifully wild and romantic. There is a delightful walk on the eastern bank of Saugus River, which passes through one of the loveliest pine groves imaginable. On the eastern side of this river also is the Pirate's Glen, respecting which a legend will be found in the following pages. The view from Round Hill in Saugus is delightful.

There are eight ponds in Lynn, several of which are large, having the appearance of little lakes. Their names are, Cedar—Tomlin's—Flax—Lily—Floating Bridge—Phillips'—Ingalls'—and Bear Pond on Nahant. The first three of these are connected with Saugus River by Strawberry Brook, on which are many mills and factories. The margins of some of these lakes are very pleasant, and will probably, at some more tasteful period, be adorned with beautiful villas and delightful cottages. The water in Tomlin's Pond is sixty feet above the ocean. Floating Bridge Pond is crossed by a bridge which floats on the water. It is four hundred and fifty-six feet in length, and is quite a curiosity, reminding one of the Persian bridge of boats across the Hellespont.

Springs are abundant—some of them exceedingly cold and pure, and good water is easily obtained. A mineral spring exists near the eastern border of the town, the waters of which are celebrated for their medicinal virtues. There are several fine springs on Nahant, particularly North Spring, which is remarkably cold, flowing from an aperture beneath a cliff, into which the sun never shines. One of the early inhabitants of Nahant,



having a violent fever, asked for water, which as usual was denied him; but, watching an opportunity, he escaped from his bed, ran half a mile to this spring, drank as much water as he wanted, and immediately recovered. A curious boiling spring, called Holyoke Spring, surrounded by willows, is found in a meadow, near the western end of Holyoke street. Another boiling spring may be seen in the clay meadow, near the centre of Saugus. There is also a mineral spring in the western part of that town, near the Malden line.

Lynn furnishes an admirable study for the geologist. The northern part of the town abounds with rocky hills, composed of porphyry, greenstone, and sienite. Porphyry commences at Red Rock, and passing through the town in a curve toward the northwest, forms a range of hills, including High Rock, Lover's Leap, and Sadler's Rock. The term porphyry is derived from a Greek word signifying purple. It is composed of feldspar and quartz, and is of various colors — purple, red, gray, brown, and black. It gives fire with steel, and is susceptible of a high polish; the best specimens being very beautiful, equalling the porphyry of the ancients. The western portion of the town comprises ledges and hills of brecciated porphyry; that is, porphyry which has been broken in fragments, and then cemented by a fluid. The porphyry formation continues on through Saugus. Near the Pirates' Glen is a ledge, which is being disintegrated into very coarse gravel, having the appearance of pumice, or rotten stone. Specimens of clinkstone porphyry are found, which, when struck, give out a metallic sound. At Lover's Leap, and some other ledges, the porphyry seems to be subsiding into fine hornstone. At Sadler's Rock, it is of a very delicate purple.

The hills, in the eastern section of the town, including the ledges and cliffs at Swampscot, consist of a coarse-grained greenstone, composed of hornblende and feldspar. In opening these ledges, dendrites of manganese have been found, beautifully disposed in the form of trees and shrubs. This tract of greenstone extends through the town, north of the porphyry hills. In many places it is beautifully veined with quartz, and other substances. A little north from the Iron Works in Saugus, is a great ledge by the roadside, with a singular vein passing through it, having the appearance of a flight of stairs. On the eastern bank of the river, southward from the Iron Works, is a wild, tremendous ledge, from which many vast fragments have fallen, and others seem ready to topple on the head of the beholder.

The northern section of the town comprises fine beds of granite, of a grayish color, composed of feldspar, hornblende, and quartz. It has its name from Siena, in Egypt. It is found in great variety, from very fine to very coarse, and is used for build-



ing, and for mill-stones. From the presence of iron ore, it frequently attracts the compass, and occasions much difficulty in surveying. At one place in the Lynn woods, the north end of the needle pointed south; and at another, it went round forty times in a minute.

Granite occurs, but chiefly in roundish masses, or boulders, composed of feldspar, quartz, and mica. It is not so frequent as formerly, the best specimens having been used for building. It is remarkable, that nearly all these boulders appear to have been brought, by a strong flood, from a considerable distance north; and many of them were left, in very peculiar and sometimes surprising positions, on the tops of the highest hills and ledges. One of these, near the Salem line, rested on the angular point of a rock, and was a great curiosity, until that rage for destructiveness, which exists in some people, caused it to be blown down by powder. Another boulder, fourteen feet in diameter, weighing one hundred and thirty tons, lay on the very summit of the cliff next east from Sadler's Rock. It appeared to repose so loosely that a strong wind might rock it, yet it required fifteen men with levers to roll it down. A boulder of breccia, on the boundary line between Lynn and Saugus, rests on a ledge of breccia of a different character, and appears to have been removed from its original situation in the north. It is twelve feet in diameter, weighing eighty-three tons. On this line also is a still greater curiosity — a vast rock of greenstone, which appears to have been brought from its bed in the north, and placed on the summit of a hill, where it forms a very picturesque object. It was originally sixteen feet in diameter, weighing two hundred tons; but several large portions have been detached, either by frost or lightning, perhaps both. It must have been a tremendous torrent, which could have removed rocks of such magnitude, and placed them on such elevations. Many boulders of granite now lie on the summit of Little Nahant. The cliffs at this place are greenstone, and on the western end are several specimens of pudding stone. A conglomerate rock, or boulder of breccia, of a very peculiar character, lies in the tide, on the south side of Little Nahant. It is a spheroid, eighteen feet in diameter, weighing two hundred and sixty tons. Its singular disposition of colors renders it a great curiosity.

The western and southern portions of Great Nahant are composed of fine and coarse grained greenstones, and greenstone porphyry. The hills and ledges on the northern side are sienite; and on the northeast, they are a coarse-grained greenstone, blending into sienite. The southeastern portion is composed of stratified rocks of argillaceous limestone, and argillaceous slate, variously combined, and traversed by immense veins of greenstone. The rocks, in this part, present a very peculiar appear-

ance, both in their combination and disposition; consisting of immense masses, and irregular fragments, cracked and broken in every direction. Were we to suppose a portion of one of the asteroids, in an ignited state, to have been precipitated through the atmosphere, from the southeast, and striking the earth in an angle of forty degrees, to have been shivered into an infinite number of fragments, it would probably present the appearance which Nahant now exhibits. There must have been some tremendous up-heaving to have produced such results; and it is not improbable that a volcano has more than once been busy among the foundations of Nahant.

On the northern shore is a vast ledge of pure hornblende, so very black and shining as to have deceived early voyagers and founders, that it was a mine of iron ore. A very curious vein of fine greenstone, two inches in thickness, passes through this ledge, for more than two hundred feet, in a direction from southeast to northwest. Eastward from this, the rock is traversed by veins of various colors, and in different directions; evidently produced by the action of fire. The primitive rock appears to have been strongly heated, and to have cracked in cooling. A fissure was thus formed, through which a liquid mass was erupted; which again heated the rock, and as it cooled, formed another fissure in a transverse direction. This was filled by a third substance; a similar process followed; and the original rock, and the preceding veins, were traversed by a fourth formation.

At Nahant are found porphyry, gneiss, and hornstone. It also presents regular strata of foliated feldspar; and, perhaps, the only instance in New England, in which trap rock exhibits such parallel divisions. Here also are found jasper, chalcedony, and agate; with prase, prehnite, chert, chlorite, datholite, dolomite, quartz, epidote, rhomb spar, carbonate of lime, and lignified asbestos. At Crystal Beach are fine specimens of crystallized corundum, probably the only locality of this mineral in the United States. These crystals are in six-sided prisms, terminated by hexagonal pyramids, half an inch in diameter, and from two to five inches in length, single and in clusters. Swallows' Cave is composed of greenstone; Pulpit Rock of argillaceous slate; Castle Rock of greenstone; Egg Rock of compact feldspar. Mineral teeth are formed by the fusion of pure feldspar.

In Saugus are found most of the rocks common to Lynn. Here are rocks of red and green jasper, with antimony, and bog iron ore in abundance. An account of the Iron Furnace anciently established here, will be found in the following pages. Lead ore has also been discovered, in the western part of the town, on land owned by Benjamin Franklin Newhall. In the northern part of the town, sulphate of iron is found. Extensive beds of



very fine clay exist near the centre of the town, which have been wrought into pottery. In 1630, a very singular discovery was made near the old tavern on the west of Saugus River. It consisted of a mass of very fine and beautiful blue sand, which lay in a hard gravel bed, about one foot below the surface. There were about eight quarts of it. This sand has a very sharp grit, yet it is as fine as can easily be imagined, and as blue as the bluest pigment. Viewed through a magnifying glass, it appears bright and sparkling, like the finest possible particles of silver. At Lynnfield, an extensive quarry of serpentine has been opened.

A large portion of Lynn bears strong evidence both of alluvial and diluvial formations. That part between the porphyry hills and the harbor, is chiefly composed of strata of sand, clay, and gravel, covered by loam and soil. The clay and gravel vary in thickness from two to fifteen feet. On the borders of Saugus River are extensive tracts of salt marsh, the mud of which is from two to twenty feet in depth; and it is probable that this portion was once covered by the ocean. There are also evidences that a much larger quantity of water has at some time been discharged by the Saugus River; and this accords with an Indian tradition. Just above the iron works, the river diverges toward the west; but a great valley continues toward the north. Whoever is curious to trace this valley several miles, may be satisfied that a great flood has at some time passed through it; and perhaps it was this torrent which brought the boulders, and swept down the soil which now constitutes the bed of the marshes.

These great tracts of marsh, called by the first settlers Rumney Marsh, are in Lynn, Saugus, and Chelsea. They lie between the porphyry hills and the sea, and are about a mile in breadth, and nearly three miles in extent. The western portion of these marshes are protected by Chelsea Beach, a long ridge of sand which has been thrown up by the tide, and lies against their southern margin. The eastern section is defended from the sea by the Lynn Beach, which lies a mile distant, with the harbor inside. Throughout this region of marsh are trunks of great trees, chiefly pines, imbedded from two to four feet beneath the surface, and in a good state of preservation. The salt water frequently covers these marshes from two to three feet. Many of these trees lie in a direction from north to south, as if they had been blown down by a strong north wind, on the spot where they grew. But that is probably the direction in which they would have been deposited, if brought down by a great northern current. Others lie in different directions. If we suppose these trees to have grown where they now lie, we have the singular anomaly of a vast forest of great trees, growing from two to six



feet below the high tides of salt water. Nor will it assist us any to suppose, that this forest was protected from the sea by a great ridge or beach; for a river comes down from the north, and they must then have grown at a greater depth beneath fresh water. The probability that they were brought from their original forest by a great northern current, is strengthened by the fact, that on the west of these marshes is a great region of mounds of sand and gravel, from twenty to one hundred feet in height, in digging through which, portions of trees have been found. Another fact will be interesting to the geologist, that though all the neighboring hills are covered with trees, these mounds, though clothed with grass, are destitute of foliage; and William Wood, more than two centuries ago, describes them as 'upland grasse, without tree or shrub.'

An alluvion commences at Humfrey's Beach, and passes up Stacey's Brook, beneath which is another fine stratum of clay. In this tract are some rich peat meadows, which were formerly ponds. The peat is a formation of decomposed vegetables, and is dug by a kind of long spade, which cuts it into regular solids, about four inches square, and two feet in length. It is then piled and dried for fuel, and produces a constant and intense heat. A meadow between Orange and Chatham streets contains an alluvial deposit of rich black soil, twelve feet in depth. In digging to the depth of three feet, the trunk of a large oak was found; and at the depth of six feet, a stratum of leaves and burnt wood. In various other places, the fallen trunks of great trees have been found, from three to six feet below the surface, with large trees growing above them. In the north part of Lynn, and in Saugus, are several large swamps, remarkable for the great depth of vegetable matter, and for the wonderful preservation of wood in them. Many acres of these swamps have been cleared, and several hundred cords of wood taken from them, and charred into good coal. And still beneath these depths appears to be a 'lower deep,' filled with wood partially decayed. The whole southern section of the town, also, presents strong evidences of great geological changes. Whoever visits Chelsea Beach, which extends westward from Lynn Harbor, may perceive that a new beach has been thrown up, outside the old one; and the appearance gives great confidence in the Indian tradition, that this beach was thrown up by a great storm, in a single night. The Lynn Beach was once much further out than at present; and within it was a swamp, covered by large pines and cedars, forming an isthmus from Lynn to Nahant. The beach was thrown up against the eastern shore of this isthmus, and a succession of great storm tides have driven it in, until the whole isthmus has been submerged by water and sand. By my own surveys, I find that this beach has moved five rods with-

in twelve years, and now covers many acres of marshy ground, which were on the western side. After great storms, portions of this marsh, covered by the stumps of trees, frequently appear on the eastern side. This beach has been so much injured, there is reason to apprehend that the tides may sweep over and destroy it. Such an event is greatly to be deprecated, both as it regards its beauty and utility; for the existence of the harbor depends on its durability. If the plan be completed, which I proposed, of making a barrier of cedar, it may be saved. I hope that public spirit enough may be found, to preserve this great natural curiosity for the admiration of future generations.

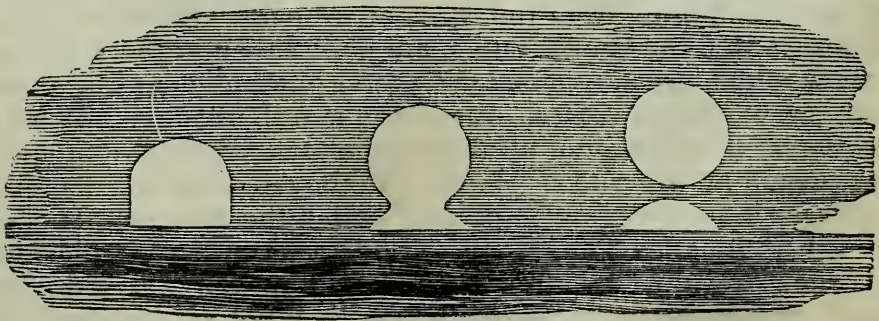
Most of the trees and plants common to New England, are found at Lynn, and some which are rare and valuable. The principal trees are white and pitch pine, white and red cedar, oak, walnut, maple, birch, and hemlock. One of the most common shrubs is the barberry; the root of which is used in dying yellow, and the fruit is an excellent preserve. Many tons of sumach are annually gathered, and used in the manufacture of morocco leather. Whortleberries are very plenty in the pastures, and many hundred bushels are annually gathered. Blueberries, raspberries, blackberries, and cranberries, are also common. The forests, fields, and meadows, are rich in the abundance and variety of medicinal plants, and the town presents a fine field for the botanist.

Great numbers of wild birds, of almost every kind, frequent the woods and waters of Lynn. Numerous sea-fowl afford amusement to the sportsman; and there is scarcely a bird common to North America, which does not, at some season of the year, gratify our ears with its song, or delight our eyes by its plumage. A great variety of fishes, also, are found in the waters. Haddock, halibut, cod, bass, and mackerel, are taken in abundance in boats; and nippers and tautog are caught by dozens, with hook and line, from the cliffs of Nahant. Hundreds, and sometimes thousands of lobsters, are daily taken in the summer, by traps which are set around the shores; and alewives in abundance are caught in the streams in the month of May. To give a particular description of all the animal and vegetable productions, would be to write a volume. In the coves around Nahant, that very singular vegetable animal, called the sea-anemone, or rose fish, is found. They grow on the rocks in the deep pools, and when extended, are from six to eight inches in length, furnished with antenna, or feelers, which they put out to seek for their food; but if touched, they shrink close to the rock, and remain folded like a rose. On summer evenings, the meadows exhibit a beautiful appearance, being illuminated by thousands of fire-flies, which appear to take ineffable delight in enlivening the gloom by their phosphoric radiance. One of them in a dark room, will emit sufficient light to read the finest print.



Some portions of the soil are very fertile, but generally it is rather hard and acidulous. The pastures produce barberries, the woodlands grapes; the meadows are filled with cranberries, the marshes with samphire; and the fields, when neglected, run into sorrel. Much dependance is placed upon sea-weeds for the enrichment of the lands; but the soil would be much more permanently improved by the rich mud from the bed of the harbor.

The climate is subject to sudden changes, and great extremes of heat and cold, being strangely mixed up with beautiful sunlight and horrid storms, moonshiny evenings and long days of cold rain, bright blue sky and impenetrable fogs. European poets tell us of the charms of May, and the song of the nightingale; our pleasant month is June, and the whip-poor-will is our bird of love. The months of June, July, and August are usually delightful; and in October and November we have the Indian summer. The temperature is then soft and agreeable, and a pleasing haze fills the atmosphere. Sometimes the sky is 'darkly, deeply, beautifully blue;' and sunset is often so gorgeously glorious, that the art of the painter cannot portray it. The months of May and September usually abound with chilly rain storms, and dismal drizzly days. After these succeed the two pleasantest portions of the year. The cold season continues from December to April, and we have snow in each of these months, from three inches to three feet in depth. As winter approaches, the forests are arrayed in the most splendid and beautiful colors; exhibiting almost every variety of shade, from pale green, and dark brown, to bright yellow and deep scarlet. Not only are single leaves thus colored, but whole trees and masses of foliage are vividly tinged with the most pleasing and variegated hues. In winter, the weather is often, for many days together, exceedingly cold, and the moonlight most intensely brilliant.

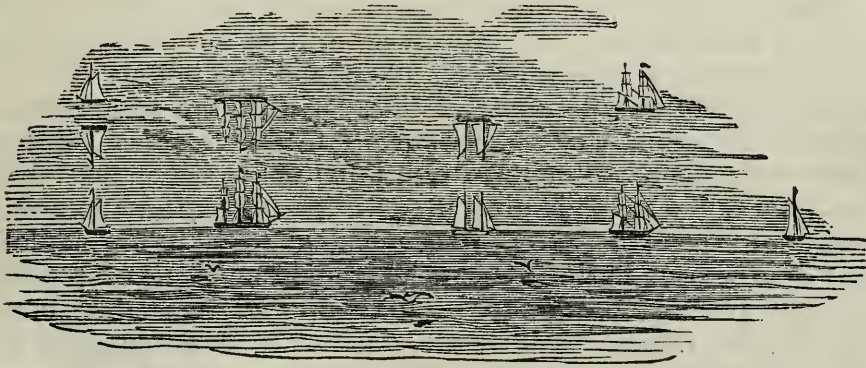


SUNRISE ON THE WATER.

The unequal refraction of the atmosphere frequently occasions peculiar and curious appearances on the water. Sometimes the sun, when it rises through a dense atmosphere, appears



greatly elongated in its vertical diameter. Presently it appears double, the two parts being connected together by a neck. At length two suns are distinctly seen; the refracted sun appearing wholly above the water, before the true sun has risen. I have repeatedly seen and admired this surprising and exceedingly beautiful phenomenon. Some critics, because Pentheus saw two suns rising over Thebes, have drawn the inference that he could not have been a member of the temperance society; but his vision might have been merely assisted by refraction.\* This mirage, or loom, frequently causes Nahant, Egg Rock, and vessels on the coast, to appear nearly twice their natural height, and sometimes to seem actually elevated in the air, so as to leave a space beneath them. Portions of the south shore, also, which are commonly invisible, appear plainly in sight.



THE PHANTOM SHIPS.

It was undoubtedly this effect of the mirage which occasioned the story of the Phantom Ship at New Haven, and the Flying Dutchman. On a pleasant Sunday afternoon, in the summer of 1843, I saw several vessels sailing off Nahant, reflected in the manner represented above. The atmosphere was dense, yet transparent, and there were several strata of thin vapory clouds lightly suspended over the water, on which the vessels were brightly mirrored. The refracted images were as clearly portrayed as the real vessels beneath; and a drawing can but imperfectly represent the exceeding beauty of the mirage.

The temperature of Nahant, being moderated by sea-breezes, so as to be cooler in summer and milder in winter, than the main land, is regarded as being highly conducive to health. It is delightful in summer to ramble round this romantic peninsula, and

---

\* Et solam geminum, et duplices se ostendere Thebas.

ENEAD, 4, 470.

He saw two suns, and double Thebes appear.

DRYDEN'S VIRGIL.

to examine at leisure its interesting curiosities — to hear the waves rippling the colored pebbles of the beaches, and see them gliding over the projecting ledges in fanciful cascades — to behold the plovers and sand pipers running along the beaches, the seal slumbering upon the outer rocks, the white gulls soaring overhead, the porpoises pursuing their rude gambols along the shore, and the curlew, the loon, the black duck, and the coot — the brant, with his dappled neck, and the oldwife, with her strange, wild, vocal melody, swimming gracefully in the coves, and rising and sinking with the swell of the tide. The moonlight evenings here are exceedingly lovely; and the phosphoric radiance of the billows, in dark nights, making the waters look like a sea of fire, — exhibits a scene of wonderful beauty.

But, however delightful Nahant may appear in summer, it is surpassed by the grandeur and sublimity of a winter storm. When the strong east wind has been sweeping over the Atlantic for several days, and the billows, wrought up to fury, are foaming along like living mountains — breaking upon the precipitous cliffs, — dashing into the rough gorges, — thundering in the subterranean caverns of rock, and throwing the white foam and spray, like vast columns of smoke, hundreds of feet into the air, above the tallest cliffs, — an appearance is presented which the wildest imagination cannot surpass. Then the ocean — checked in its headlong career by a simple bar of sand — as if mad with its detention, roars like protracted thunder; and the wild sea-birds, borne along by the furious waters, are dashed to death against the cliffs! Standing at such an hour upon the rocks, I have seen the waves bend bars of iron, an inch in diameter, double — float rocks of granite, sixteen feet in length, as if they were timbers of wood, — and the wind, seizing the white gull in its irresistible embrace, bear her, shrieking, many miles into the Lynn woods! In summer, a day at Nahant is delightful — but a storm in winter is glorious!



## CHAPTER II.

Early Voyages and Discoveries — Nahant granted to Robert Gorges — Indians at Lynn — Nanapashemet, the great Moon Chief, and his Wars — Montowampate and Wenepoykin, Sagamores of Lynn — Story of Wenuchus, the Sachem's Bride — Poquannum, Sagamore of Nahant — Belles of the Forest — Indian Customs — A. D. 986 to 1628.

Truth is strange, stranger than fiction.

HENRY NEALE.



It would be extremely gratifying, if we could roll back the veil of oblivion which shrouds the early history of the American continent, and through the sunlight which must once have illumined those regions of now impenetrable darkness, behold the scenery, and trace the events, which occupied that long space of silence or activity. Has one half of this great globe slumbered in unprofitable and inglorious uselessness since the morning of the creation, serving no other purpose than to balance the opposite portion in its revolutions through unvarying ages? — or has it been peopled by innumerable nations, enjoying all the vicissitudes of animal and intellectual life?

The most strenuous advocates of the priority of the claim of Columbus to the discovery of America, admit that he found people here — and we can look back with certainty to no period, however remote, in which we do not find the continent inhabited. How came those people here? Were they the descendants of a cis-atlantic Adam? — or did they find their way, by accident or design, from the eastern continent? If the latter supposition be the most probable, then a corresponding accident or design might have returned some of those daring adventurers to their homes, and thus a knowledge have been conveyed of the existence of another continent. Nor are the difficulties of a passage, either from Europe or Asia, so great as may at first be supposed. The continent of Asia approaches within fifty miles of the northwest coast of America; and ships which traded from Iceland to the Levant, might easily have sailed from Greenland along the shore of New England. People were much more



venturous in early days than we are generally willing to allow; and canoes might have passed across the ocean from Japan, and even by the isles of the Pacific — as it is evident they must have done, to people those islands. When Captain Blighe was cast adrift by Christian, he passed twelve hundred miles in an open boat with safety. Why might not such an event have happened three thousand years ago, as well as yesterday?

The Scandinavian manuscripts inform us, that in the year 986, Eric the Red, an Icelandic prince, emigrated to Greenland. In his company was Bardson, whose son Biarne was then on a voyage to Norway. On his return, going in search of his father, he was driven far to sea, and discovered an unknown country. In the year 1000, Leif, a son of Eric, pursued the discovery of the new country, and sailed along the coast as far as Rhode Island, where he made a settlement; and because he found grapes there, he called it Vineland. In 1002, Thorwald, his brother, went to Vineland, where he remained two years.

It is very reasonable to suppose that these voyagers, in sailing along the coast, discovered Lynn, and it is even probable that they landed at Nahant. In 1004, we are informed that Thorwald, leaving Vineland, or Rhode Island, 'sailed eastward, and then northward, past a remarkable headland, enclosing a bay, and which was opposite to another headland. They called it Kialarnes, or Keel-cape,' from its resemblance to the keel of a ship. There is no doubt that this was Cape Cod; and as they had no map, and could not see Cape Ann, it is probable that the other headland was the Gurnet. 'From thence, they sailed along the eastern coast of the land to a promontory which there projected, (probably Nahant,) and which was every where covered with wood. Here Thorwald went ashore, with all his companions. He was so pleased with the place, that he exclaimed — "Here it is beautiful! and here I should like to fix my dwelling!"' Afterwards, when they were prepared to go on board, they observed on the sandy beach, within the promontory, three hillocks. They repaired thither, and found three canoes, and under each three skrellings, (Indians.) They came to blows with them, and killed eight of them, but the ninth escaped in his canoe. Afterwards a countless multitude of them came out from the interior of the bay, against them. They endeavored to protect themselves by raising battle screens on the ship's side. The skrellings continued shooting at them for a while, and then retired. Thorwald had been wounded by an arrow under the arm. When he found that the wound was mortal, he said — "I now advise you to prepare for your departure as soon as possible; but me ye shall bring to the promontory where I thought it good to dwell. It may be that it was a prophetic word which fell from my mouth, about my abiding there for a

season. There ye shall bury me; and plant a cross at my head, and also at my feet, and call the place Krossanes in all time coming." He died, and they did as he had ordered; afterward they returned.\*

The question has arisen whether Krossanes, the Promontory of the Cross, was Nahant or Gurnet Point. There is nothing remarkable about the latter place, and though so long a time has passed, no person has thought it desirable to dwell there, but it is used as a sheep pasture. It is far otherwise with Nahant, which answers to the description well. An early writer says that it was 'well wooded with oaks, pines, and cedars;' and it has a 'sandy beach within the promontory.' Thousands also, on visiting it, have borne witness to the appropriateness of Thorwald's exclamation—'Here it is beautiful! and here I should like to fix my dwelling!'

If the authenticity of the Scandinavian manuscripts be admitted, the Northmen, as the people of Norway, Denmark, and Sweden are called, visited this country repeatedly, in the eleventh and twelfth centuries; but if they made any settlements, they were probably destroyed in some of the numerous wars of the aborigines. The Welsh Triads and Chronicles, those treasures of historic and Bardic lore, inform us, that in 1170, Madoc, Prince of Wales, on the tyrannous usurpation of his brother David, came to America, with a party of his followers, and settled a colony. I see no reason to doubt this record—but if there were no descendants of Welshmen in America then, there are plenty now.

Alonzo Sanchez, of Huelva, in Spain, in a small vessel with seventeen men, as we are informed by De la Vega, was driven on the American coast in 1487. He returned with only five men, and died at the house of Columbus.

In 1492, the immortal Columbus made his first voyage to South America, but he did not come to North America until 1498.

In 1497, Sebastian Cabot, a bold and enterprising Englishman, visited the coast of North America, and took possession of it, in the name of his king, Henry VII.

In 1602, Bartholomew Gosnold visited our shores. He discovered land on Friday, the fourteenth of May, at six o'clock in the morning.† Sailing along by the shore, at noon, he anchored near a place which he called 'Savage Rock,' and which many have supposed to have been Nahant.‡ A sail-boat went off to them, containing eight Indians, dressed in deer-skins, excepting their chief, who wore a complete suit of English clothes, which

\* *Antiquitates Americanæ*, xxx. † Purchas' Pilgrim, vol. 4, p. 1647. ‡ Bancroft's U. S. vol. 1, p. 112.



he obtained by trading at the eastward. The Indians treated them kindly, and desired their longer stay; but they left them about three in the afternoon,\* and sailing southerly, 'sixteen leagues,' the next morning they found themselves just within Cape Cod. Archer's account of the voyage says — 'The Coast we left was full of goodly Woods, faire Plaines, with little green, round Hills above the Cliffs appearing unto vs, which are indifferently raised, but all Rockie, and of shining stones, which might have perswaded vs a longer stay there.' This answers well to the appearances at Nahant; but some have supposed Savage Rock to be somewhere on the coast of Maine. There is, however, no spot on that coast which answers exactly to the description; and Judge Williamson, the historian of Maine, says — 'We have doubts whether Gosnold ever saw any land of ours.' †

In 1603, Martin Pring, came over with two vessels, the *Speedwell* and *Discoverer*, to obtain sassafras, an article at that time in great demand in England. He says — 'Coming to the Maine in latitude 43 degrees, we ranged the same to the southwest. Meeting with no sassafras, we left those places, with all the aforesaid islands, shaping our course for Savage Rocke, discovered the yeare before by Captain Gosnold; where, going upon the Mayne, we found people, with whom we had no long conversation, because we could find no sassafras. Departing thence, we bare into that great gulf, (Cape Cod Bay,) which Captain Gosnold overshot the yeare before, coasting and finding people on the north side thereof; yet not satisfied with our expectation, we left them and sailed over, and came to anchor on the south side.' ‡ Other voyagers doubtless visited our coast, but as places were unnamed, and the language of the natives unknown, little information can be gained from their descriptions.

---

Thus far we have pursued our way through the shadows which envelope the whole early history of the American continent. We have now come to a period when the indications of truth give place to certainty; when the shadows disappear, and the sun of civilization and refinement begins to dawn brightly upon us. We have now particulars enough, perhaps, to satisfy the most fastidious — certainly more than any other people on earth.

The next white man who appears at Nahant, was that dauntless hero and enterprizing statesman, Captain John Smith.

---

\* Mass. Hist. Coll. vol. 27. p. 1654.

† Hist. Maine, vol. 1, p. 185.

‡ Purchas, vol. 4,



Having established the colony of Virginia, he came north, in 1614, made a survey of the whole coast, and published a map. In his description of the islands of Massachusetts Bay, proceeding westward from Naumkeag, now Salem, he says — ‘The next I can remember by name are the Mattahunts, two pleasant Isles of Groves, Gardens and Cornfields, a league in the sea from the Maine. The Isles of Mattahunts are on the west side of this bay, where are many Isles, and some Rocks, that appear a great height above the water, like the Pieramides of Egypt.’\* It is evident, that by the Mattahunts he meant the Nahants, the pronounciation of which, perhaps, he imperfectly ‘remembered.’ His delineation of these islands on the map, though very small, is very correct; and he named them the ‘Fullerton Islands,’ probably from the name of the surveyor, or some other friend. He appears to have examined the islands and shores attentively. He says, ‘The coast of Massachusetts is so indifferently mixed with high clay or sandy cliffs in one place, and the tracts of large, long ledges of divers sorts, and quarries of stones in other places, so strangely divided with tinctured veines of divers colours, as free stone for building, slate for tiling, smooth stone for making Furnaces and Forges for Glasse and Iron, and Iron ore sufficient conveniently to melt in them . . . who will undertake the rectifying of an Iron Forge, in my opinion cannot lose.’\* As the beds of iron in Saugus had not then been discovered, he probably mistook the hornblende ledge on the north of Nahant, for a mine of iron ore.

The Nahants appear to have been admired and coveted by all who visited them. On the twentieth of December, 1622, we find them granted by the council in England to Captain Robert Gorges. He came over in 1623, took possession of his lands, and probably commenced a settlement at Winnisimet, which was also included in his grant.

‘The said Councill grant unto Robert Gorges, youngest son of Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Knight, and his heires, all that part of the Maine land in New England, commonly called and known by the name of the Massachusetts, scytuate and lyeing vpon the North East side of the Bay, called and known by the name of the Massachusetts, or by whatever name or names whatsoever called, with all coastes and shoares along the Sea for Ten English Miles in a straight line towards the North East, accounting seaventeen hundred and sixty yards to the mile; and 30 English miles, after the same rate, into the Mayne Land, through all the breadth aforesaid; togeather with all Islands so lyeinge within 3 miles of any part of the said land.

‘Robert Gorges dies without issue; the said lands descend to

---

\* Smith's New England.

John Gorges, his eldest brother. John Gorges, by deed bearing date 20 January, 1628-9, (4 Car. I.) grants to Sir William Brereton, of Handforth, in the county of Chester, Baronet, and his heires, all the lande, in breadth lyeinge from the East side of Charles River to the Easterly parte of the Cape called Nahannte, and all the lands lyeinge in length 20 miles northeast into the Maine land, from the mouth of the said Charles River, lyeinge also in length 20 miles into the Maine land from the said Cape Nahannte; also two Islands, lyeinge next unto the shoare between Nahannte and Charles River, the bigger called Brereton, and the lesser Susanna.\*

'Sir William Brereton dyes, leaving Thomas, his only son, afterward Sir Thomas, and Susanna his daughter. Sir Thomas dyes without issue. Susanna marries Edward Lenthall, Esq., and dyes, leaving Mary, her only daughter and heire. Mary is married to Mr. Levett of the Inner Temple, who claymes the said Lands in right of Mary his wife, who is heire to Sir William Brereton and Sir Thomas Brereton.

'Sir William Brereton sent over Severall families and Servants, who possessed and Improved severall Large tracts of the said Lands, and made Severall Leases, as appeares by the said Deedes.'†

A portion of these lands was granted by Captain Gorges to John Oldham, including Nahant and part of Saugus. In a letter from the Council in England to Governor Endecott, dated April 17, 1629, we find as follows, 'Mr. Oldham's grant from Mr. Gorges, is to him and John Dorrell, for all the lands within Massachusetts Bay, between Charles River and *Abousett* River; Containing in length by streight lyne 5 Miles vp the Charles River into the Maine Land, northeast from the border of said Bay, including all Creekes and Points by the way, and 3 Myles in Length from the Mouth of the foresaid River *Abousett*, vp into the Maine Land N. W. including all Creekes and Points, and all the Land in Breadth and Length between the foresaid Rivers, with all prerogatives, royall Mynes excepted.'‡ The writer of this letter, in reference to the claim of Oldham, says, 'I hold it void in law,' and advises Mr. Endecott to take possession. Such possession was taken of the Nahants, as will be seen in proceeding; and though the heirs of Gorges afterward renewed their claim, the colony declined either to relinquish or pay; because Gorges, after being appointed to the government, had relinquished the possession and returned to England.

\* These two islands were East Boston and Belle Isle.

† Mass. Archives.

‡ Hazard's Collections.



Before we proceed with the history of the Whites, it will be interesting to learn something more respecting the Red Men. Come, sit with me in the pleasant shade, and I will tell you their story.

The emigrants from England found the country inhabited by a people who were called Indians, because when first discovered, the country was supposed to be a part of India. They were divided into several great nations, each of which consisted of many tribes. Lechford says—‘They were governed by sachems, kings, and sagamores, petty lords;’ but Smith, who was here before him, calls them ‘sagamos;’ and as the Indians, in this neighborhood at least, had no *r* in their language, he is probably correct. The word *sachem*, pronounced *sawkum* by the Indians, is a word meaning great strength, or power; and the word *sâchemo*, or *sâgamo*, evidently has the same derivation. Their plural was formed in *ûog*; Sagamore Hill, therefore, is the same as *Sâchemûog* Hill, or the Hill of Kings.

There appear to have been as many as seven nations in New England. The ever-warring Taratines inhabited the eastern part of Maine, beyond the Penobscot river; and their great sachem was Nultonanit. From the Penobscot to the Pascataqua were the Chur-churs, formerly governed by a mighty chief, called a Bashaba. The Pawtuckets had a great dominion, reaching from the Pascataqua to the river Charles, and extending north as far as Concord, on the Merrimac. Their name is preserved in Pawtucket Falls, at Lowell. They were governed by Nanapashemet, who sometime resided at Lynn, and, according to Gookin, could raise three thousand warriors. The Massachusetts, so named from the Blue Hills at Milton, were governed by Chickataubut, who also commanded three thousand men. His dominion was bounded on the north and west by Charles river, and on the south extended to Weymouth and Canton. The Wampanoags occupied the southeastern part of Massachusetts, from Cape Cod to Narraganset Bay. They were ruled by Massasoit, whose chief residence was at Pokanoket, now Bristol, in Rhode Island. He was a sachem of great power, having dominion over thirty-two tribes, and could have brought three thousand warriors into the field, by a word; yet he was a man of peace, and a friend to the English, and during all the provocations and disturbances of that early period, he governed his nation in tranquillity for more than forty years, leaving an example of wisdom to future ages. The Narragansets, on the west of Narraganset Bay, in Rhode Island, numbered five thousand warriors, and were governed by two sachems, Canonius and his nephew Miantonimo, who ruled together in harmony. The Pequots occupied Connecticut, and were governed by Sassacus, a name of terror, who commanded

four thousand fighting men, and whose residence was at New London. Beside these, there were the Nipmucks in the interior of Massachusetts, who had no great sachem, but united with the other nations in their wars, according to their inclination. The Pequots and the Taratines were ever at war with some of the other nations, and were the Goths and Vandals of New England.

The Indians were very numerous, until they were reduced by a great war, and by a devastating sickness. All the early voyagers speak of 'multitudes,' and 'countless multitudes.' Smith, who took his survey in 1614, passing along the shore in a little boat, says — 'The seacoast as you pass, shows you all along, large corne fields, and great troupes of well proportioned people;' and adds, that there were three thousand on the islands in Boston harbor. Gookin has enumerated eighteen thousand warriors in five nations, and if the remainder were as populous, there must have been twenty-five thousand fighting men, and at least one hundred thousand people, in New England. In the spring of 1615, some provocation was given by the western Indians to the Taratines, who, with a vindictive spirit, resolved upon retaliation; and they carried their revenge to an extent scarcely paralleled in the dreadful history of human warfare. They killed the great Bashaba of Penobscot, murdered his women and children, and overran the whole country from Penobscot to the Blue Hills. Their death-word was 'cram! cram!' — kill! kill! — and so effectually did they 'suit the action to the word,' and so many thousands on thousands did they slaughter, that as Gorges says, it was 'horrible to be spoken of!' In 1617, commenced a great sickness, which some have supposed was the plague, others the small pox, or yellow fever; but I have no doubt it arose from the putrefaction of the unburied dead. This sickness made such dreadful devastation among those whom the tomahawk had not reached, that when the English arrived, the land was literally covered with human bones. Still the vengeance of the Taratines was unsatiated, and we find them hunting for the lives of the few Sagamores who remained!

NANAPASHEMET, or the New Moon, was one of the greatest sachems in New England, ruling over a larger extent of country than any other. He swayed, at one time, all the tribes north and east of the Charles river, to the river Pascataqua. The Nipmucks acknowledged his dominion, as far as 'Pocontocook,' now Deerfield, on the Connecticut; and after his death they had no great sachem.\* Nanapashemet, like the orb of night,

---

\* Smith, Gookin, Hubbard. See also Samuel G. Drake's interesting Book of the Indians, published since my first edition, wherein he has accumulated a vast amount of facts respecting the Sons of the Forest.



whose name he bore, had risen and shone in splendor. But his Moon was now full, and had begun to wane. He resided at Lynn until the great war of the Taratines in 1615. He then retreated to a hill on the borders of Mistick river, where he built a house, and fortified himself in the best manner possible. He survived the desolating sickness of 1617; but the deadly vengeance of the Taratines, which induced them to stop at nothing short of his death, pursued him to his retreat, and there he was killed by them in 1619. In September, 1621, a party of the Plymouth people, having made a visit to Obatinua, sachem of Boston, went up to Medford. Mr. Winslow says: 'Having gone three miles, we came to a place where corn had been newly gathered, a house pulled down, and the people gone. A mile from hence, Nanapashemet, their king, in his lifetime had lived. His house was not like others; but a scaffold was largely built, with poles and planks, some six foot from the ground, and the house upon that, being situated upon the top of a hill. Not far from hence, in a bottom, we came to a fort, built by their deceased king — the manner thus: There were poles, some thirty or forty feet long, stuck in the ground, as thick as they could be set one by another, and with those they enclosed a ring some forty or fifty feet over. A trench, breast high, was digged on each side; one way there was to get into it with a bridge. In the midst of this palisade stood the frame of a house, wherein, being dead, he lay buried. About a mile from hence we came to such another, but seated on the top of an hill. Here Nanapashemet was killed, none dwelling in it since the time of his death.' The care which the great Moon Chief took to fortify himself, shows the fear which he felt for his mortal enemy. With his death, the vengeance of the Taratines seems in some degree to have abated; and his sons, returning to the shore, collected the scattered remnants of their tribes, over whom they ruled as sagamores on the arrival of our fathers. The general government was continued by the saunks, or queen of Nanapashemet, who was called 'Squaw Sachem.' She married Webbacowet, who was the great physician of her nation. On the fourth of September, 1640, she sold Mistick Ponds, and a large tract of land, now included in Summerville, to Jotham Gibbons of Boston. On the eighth of March, 1644, she submitted to the government of the whites, and consented to have her subjects instructed in the Bible. She died in 1667, being then old and blind. Nanapashemet had three sons, Wonohaquaham, Montowampate, and Wenepoykin, all of whom became sagamores; and a daughter Yawata.

WONOHAQUAHAM was sagamore on Mistick river, including Winnisimet. In 1627 he gave the whites liberty to settle at Charlestown, and on the records of that town he is called a

chief 'of gentle and good disposition.' He was called by the English, John, and died in 1633.

MONTOWAMPATE, sagamore of Lynn, was born in the year 1609. He lived on Sagamore Hill, near the northern end of the Long Beach. He had jurisdiction of Saugus, Naumkeag, and Masabequash, or Lynn, Salem and Marblehead. He was called by the white people, James. Mr. Dudley, in his letter to the Countess of Lincoln, says: 'Vppon the river of Mistick is seated Saggamore John, and vppon the river of Saugus Sagamore James, both soe named from the English. The elder brother John, is a handsome young . . . . (one line wanting) . . . conversant with us, affecting English apparel and houses, and speaking well of our God. His brother James is of a far worse disposition, yet repaireth to us often.' He married Wenuchus, a daughter of Passaconaway, the great powah, or priest of the nation; whose chief residence was at Penacook, now Concord, on the Merrimac. This venerable, and in some respects, wonderful man, died about the year 1673, when he was one hundred and twenty years of age. On his death bed, he called his friends around, and told that he was going to the land of spirits, to see them no more. He said he had been opposed to the English at their first coming, and sought to prevent their settlement; but now he advised them to oppose the white men no more, or they would all be destroyed. The marriage of Montowampate took place in the year 1629, when he was twenty years of age; and it gave him an opportunity to manifest his high sense of the dignity which appertained to a sachem. Thomas Morton, who was in the country at the time, and wrote a work entitled the New English Canaan, furnishes us with the following interesting particulars.

'The sachem or sagamore of Sagus, made choice, when he came to man's estate, of a lady of noble descent, daughter of Pasaquineo, the sachem or sagamore of the territories near Merrimack river, a man of the best note in all those parts, and as my countryman, Mr. Wood, declares, in his Prospect, a great nigromancer. This lady, the young sachem, with the consent and good liking of her father, marries, and takes for his wife. Great entertainment hee and his received in those parts, at her father's hands, wheare they were fested in the best manner that might be expected, according to the custome of their nation, with reveling, and such other solemnities as is usual amongst them. The solemnity being ended, Papasiquineo caused a selected number of his men to waite on his daughter home into those parts that did properly belong to her lord and husband; where the attendants had entertainment by the sachem of Sagus and his countrymen. The solemnity being ended, the attendants were gratified.



‘Not long after, the new married lady had a great desire to see her father and her native country, from whence she came. Her lord was willing to pleasure her, and not deny her request, amongst them thought to be reasonable, commanded a select number of his own men to conduct his lady to her father, where with great respect they brought her; and having feasted there awhile, returned to their own country againe, leaving the lady to continue there at her owne pleasure, amongst her friends and old acquaintance, where she passed away the time for awhile, and in the end desired to returne to her Lord againe. Her father, the old Papasiquineo, having notice of her intent, sent some of his men on ambassage to the young sachem, his sonne in law, to let him understand that his daughter was not willing to absent herself from his company any longer; and therefore, as the messengers had in charge, desired the younge lord to send a convoy for her; but he, standing upon tearmes of honor, and the maintaining of his reputation, returned to his father in law this answer: “That when she departed from him, hee caused his men to waite upon her to her father’s territories as it did become him; but now she had an intent to returne, it did become her father to send her back with a convoy of his own people; and that it stood not with his reputation to make himself or his men so servile as to fetch her againe.”

‘The old sachem, Papasiquineo, having this message returned, was intraged to think that his young son in law did not esteem him at a higher rate than to capitulate with him about the matter, and returned him this sharp reply: “That his daughter’s blood and birth deserved more respect than to be slighted, and therefore, if he would have her company, he were best to send or come for her.”

‘The young sachem, not willing to undervalue himself, and being a man of a stout spirit, did not stick to say, “That he should either send her by his own convoy, or keepe her; for he was determined not to stoope so lowe.”

‘So much these two sachems stood upon tearmes of reputation with each other, the one would not send for her, lest it should be any diminishing of honor on his part that should seeme to comply, that the lady, when I came out of the country remained still with her father; which is a thing worth the noting, that salvage people should seeke to maintaine their reputation so much as they doe.’

A chief who could treat a lady so discourteously deserved to lose her. Montowampate had not the felicity to read the Fairy Queen, or he would have thought with Spenser:

‘What vertue is so fitting for a Knight,  
Or for a Ladie whom a knight should love,  
As curtesie.’

My lady readers will undoubtedly be anxious to know if the separation was final? I am happy to inform them that it was not; as we find the Princess of Penacook enjoying the luxuries of the shores and the sea breezes at Lynn the next summer. How they met without compromising the dignity of the proud sagamore, history does not inform us; but probably, as ladies are fertile in expedients, she met him half way. In 1631 she was taken prisoner by the Taratines, as will hereafter be related. Montowampate died in 1633. Wenuchus returned to her father; and in 1686, we find mention made of her grand-daughter Pah-pocksit. Other interesting incidents in the life of Montowampate will be found in the following pages.

WENEPOYKIN, erroneously called Winnepurkit, was the youngest son of Nanapashemet. His name was pronounced with an accent and a lingering on the third syllable, We-nepawwe-kin. He was born in 1616, and was a little boy, thirteen years of age, when the white men came. The Rev. John Higginson, of Salem, says: 'To the best of my remembrance, when I came over with my father, to this place, there was in these parts a widow woman, called Squaw Sachem, who had three sons; Sagamore John kept at Mistick, Sagamore James at Saugus, and Sagamore George here at Naumkeke. Whether he was actual sachem here I cannot say, for he was then young, about my age, and I think there was an elder man that was at least his guardian.' On the death of his brothers, in 1633, he became sagamore of Lynn and Chelsea; and after the death of his mother in 1667, he was sachem of all that part of Massachusetts which is north and east of Charles River. He was the proprietor of Deer Island, which he sold to Boston. He was called Sagamore George, and George Rumney Marsh. Until the year 1738, the limits of Boston extended to Saugus, including Chelsea, which was called Rumney Marsh. Part of this great marsh is now in Chelsea and part in Saugus. The Indians living on the borders of this marsh in Lynn and Saugus, were sometimes called the Rumney Marsh Indians. Wenepoykin was taken prisoner in the Wampanoag war in 1676, and died in 1684. He married Ahawayet, daughter of Poquanum, who lived on Nahant. She presented him with one son, Manatahqua, and three daughters, Petagunsk, Wattaquattinusk, and Peta-goonaquah, who if early historians are correct in their descriptions, were as beautiful, almost, as the lovely forms which have wandered on the rocks of Nahant in later times. They were called Wanapanaquin, or the plumed ones. This word is but another spelling of Wenepawakin, their father's name, which signifies a wing or a feather. I suppose they were the belles of the forest in their day, and wore finer plumes than any of their tribe. Petagunsk was called Cicely. She had a son Tontoquon,



called John. Wuttaquattinusk, or the Little Walnut, was called Sarah; and Petagoonaquah was named Susannah. Manatahqua had two sons, Nonupanohow, called David; and Wuttanoh, which means a staff, called Samuel. The family of Wenepoykin left Lynn about the time of the Wampanoag war, and went to Wameset, or Chelmsford, now Lowell, and settled near the Pawtucket Falls. On the sixteenth of September, 1684, immediately after the death of Wenepoykin, the people of Marblehead embraced the opportunity of obtaining a deed of their town. It was signed by Ahawayet, and many others, her relatives. She is called 'Joane Ahawayet, Squawe, relict, widow of George Saggamore, alias Wenepawweekin.'\* She survived her husband about a year, and died in 1685. On the nineteenth of March, 1685, David Nouupanohow, 'heir of Sagamore George, and in his right having some claim to Deer Island, doth hereby, for just consideration, relinquish his right to the town of Boston.'† On the eleventh of October, 1686, the people of Salem obtained a deed of their town, which was signed by the relatives of Wenepoykin.

Yawata, daughter of Nanapashenut, and sister of the three Sagamores, married Oonsumog. She lived to sign the deed of Salem in 1686, and died at Natick. She had a son, Muminquash, born in 1636, and called James Rumney Marsh, who also removed to Natick. There is great softness and euphony in the name of this Indess. Ya-wa-ta; six letters, and only one hard consonant. Probably her heart was as delicate and feminine as her name. The early settlers indicated their poetic taste by calling her Abigail.

POQUANUM, or 'Dark Skin,' was sachem of Nahant. Wood, in his *New England's Prospect*, calls him 'Duke William;' and it appears by depositions in Salem Court Records, that he was known by the familiar appellation of 'Black Will.' He was cotemporary with Nanapashemet. In 1630 he sold Nahant to Thomas Dexter for a suit of clothes. It is probable that he was the chief who welcomed Gosnold in 1602, and who is represented to have been dressed in a complete suit of English clothes. If he were the same, that may have been the reason why he was so desirous to possess another suit. He was killed in 1633, as will be found under that date. He had two children — Ahawayet, who married Wenepoykin; and Queakussen, commonly called 'Captain Tom,' or Thomas Poquanium, who was born in 1611. Mr. Gookin, in 1686, says, 'He is an Indian of good repute, and professes the Christian religion.' Probably he is the one alluded to by Rev. John Eliot, in his letter, November 13, 1649, in which he says: 'Linn Indians are all

\* Essex Reg. Deeds, 11, 132.

† Suffolk Records.

naught, save one, who sometimes cometh to hear the word, and telleth me that he prayeth to God; and the reason why they are bad is partly and principally because their sachem is naught, and careth not to pray to God.' There is a confession of faith, preserved in Eliot's 'Tears of Repentance,' by Poquannum, probably of this same Indian. He signed the deed of Salem in 1686, and on the seventeenth of September in that year, gave the following testimony :

' Thomas Queakussen, alias Captain Tom, Indian, now living at Wamesit, neare Patucket Falls, aged about seventy-five years, testifieth and saith, That many yeares since, when he was a youth, he lived with his father, deceased, named Poquannum, who some time lived at Sawgust, now called Linn; he married a second wife, and lived at Nahant; and himself in after time lived about Mistick, and that he well knew all these parts about Salem, Marblehead and Linn; and that Salem, and the river running up between that neck of land and Bass river was called Naumkeke, and the river between Salem and Marblehead was called Massabequash; also he says he well knew Sagamore George, who married the Deponent's Owne Sister, named Joane, who died about a yeare since; and Sagamore George left two daughters, named Sicilye and Sarah, and two grand-children by his son; Nonumpanumhow the one called David, and the other Wuttanoh; and I myself am one of their kindred as before; and James Rumney Marsh's mother is one of Sagamore George, his kindred; and I knew two squawes more, living now about Pennecooke, one named Pahpocksitt, and the other's name I know not; and I knew the grandmother of these two squawes named Wenuchus; she was a principal proprietor of these lands about Naumkege, now Salem; all these persons above named are concerned in the antient property of the lands above mentioned.' Wabaquin also testified, that David was the grandson of Sagamore George — by his father, deceased, Manatahqua.\*

NAHANTON was born about the year 1600. On the seventh of April, 1635, 'Nahanton' was ordered by the Court to pay Rev. William Blackstone of Boston, two beaver skins, for damage done to his swine by setting traps. In a deposition taken at Natick, August 15, 1672, he is called 'Old Ahaton of Punkapog, aged about seaventy yeares;' and in a deposition at Cambridge, October 7, 1686, he is called 'Old Mahanton, aged about ninety years.' In the same deposition he is called 'Nahanton.' He testifies concerning the right of the heirs of Wenepoykin to sell the lands at Salem, and declares himself a relative of Sagamore George. He signed the deed of Quincy, August 5, 1665, and in that deed is called 'Old Nahatun,' one of the 'wise men' of

---

\* Essex Reg. Deed, 11, 131.



Sagamore Wampatuck.\* He also signed a quit claim deed to 'the proprietated inhabitants of the town of Boston,' March 19, 1685.†

QUANOPKONAT, called John, was another relative of Winne-poykin. His widow Joan, and his son James, signed the deed of Salem in 1686. Masconomo was sagamore of Agawam, now Ipswich. Dudley says, 'he was tributary to Sagamore James.' From the intimacy which subsisted between them, he was probably a relative. He died March 8, 1658, and his gun and other implements were buried with him.‡

The names of the Indians are variously spelt in records and depositions, as they were imperfectly understood from their nasal pronounciation. Some of them were known by different names, and as they had no baptism, or ceremony of naming their children, they commonly received no name until it was fixed by some great exploit, or some remarkable circumstance.

The Indians have been admirably described by Wood, who resided at Lynn, at the first settlement. 'They were black haired, out nosed, broad shouldered, brawny armed, long and slender handed, out breasted, small waisted, lank bellied, well thighed, flat kneed, handsome grown legs, and small feet. In a word, they were more amiable to behold, though only in Adam's livery, than many a compounded fantastic in the newest fashion.' In another place he speaks of 'their unparalleled beauty.' Josselyn, in his *New England Rarities*, says: 'The women, many of them, have very good features, seldome without a come-to-me in their countenance, all of them black eyed, having even short teeth and very white, their hair black, thick and long, broad breasted, handsome straight bodies and slender, their limbs cleanly straight, generally plump as a patridge, and saving now and then one, of a modest deportment.' Lechford says: 'The Indesses that are young, are some of them very comely, having good features. Many prettie Brownettos and spider fingered lasses may be seen among them.' After such graphic and beautiful descriptions, nothing need be added to complete the idea that their forms were exquisitely perfect, superb, and voluptuous.

The dress of the men was the skin of a deer or seal tied round the waist, and in winter a bear or wolf skin thrown over the shoulders, with moccasons or shoes of moose hide. The women wore robes of beaver skins, with sleeves of deer skin drest, and drawn with lines of different colors into ornamental figures. Some wore a short mantle of trading cloth, blue or red, fastened

---

\* See the original deed of Quincy, in the possession of Hon. John Quincy Adams.

† Suffolk Records. ‡ Rev. Joseph B. Felt's History of Ipswich.

with a knot under the chin, and girt around the waist with a zone; their buskins fringed with feathers, and a fillet round their heads, which were often adorned with plumes.

Their money was made of shells, gathered on the beaches, and was of two kinds. The one was called wampum peag, or white money, and was made of the twisted part of the conkle strung together like beads. Six of these passed for a penny, and a foot for about a shilling. The other was called suckauhoc, or black money, and was made of the hinge of the poquahoc clam, bored with a sharp stone. The value of this money was double that of the white. These shells were also very curiously wrought into pendants, bracelets, and belts of wampum, several inches in breadth, with figures of animals and flowers. Their sachems were profusely adorned with it, and some of the princely females wore dresses worth fifty or a hundred dollars. It passed for beaver and other commodities as currently as silver.

Their weapons were bows, arrows and tomahawks. Their bows were made of walnut, or some other elastic wood, and strung with sinews of deer or moose. Their arrows were made of elder, and feathered with the quills of eagles. They were headed with a long sharp stone of porphyry or jasper, tied to a short stick, which was thrust into the pith of the elder. Their tomahawks were made of a flat stone, sharpened to an edge, with a groove round the middle. This was inserted in a bent walnut stick, the ends of which were tied together. The flinty heads of their arrows and axes, their stone gouges and pestles, have been frequently found in the fields.

Their favorite places of residence in Lynn, appear to have been in the neighborhood of Sagamore Hill and High Rock, at Swampscot, and Nahant. One of their burial places was on the hill where the school-house stands in Mount Vernon street. In Saugus, many indications of their dwellings have been found on the old Boston road, for about half a mile from the hotel westward; and beneath the house of Mr. Ephraim Rhodes was a burying ground. On the road which runs north from Charles Sweetser's, was another Indian village on a plain, defended by a hill. Nature here formed a lovely spot, and nature's children occupied it. They usually buried their dead on the sides of hills next the sun. This was both natural and beautiful. It was the wish of Beattie's Minstrel.

'Where a green grassy turf is all I crave,  
And many an evening sun shine sweetly on my grave.'

The Indians had but few arts, and only such as were requisite for their subsistence. Their houses, called wigwams, were rude structures, made of poles set round in the form of a cone, and



covered by bark or mats. In winter, one great house, built with more care, with a fire in the middle, served for the accommodation of many. They had two kinds of boats, called canoes; the one made of a pine log, twenty to sixty feet in length, burnt and scraped out with shells; the other made of birch bark, very light and elegant. They made fishing lines of wild hemp, equal to the finest twine, and used fish bones for hooks. Their method of catching deer was by making two fences of trees, half a mile in extent, in the form of an angle, with a snare at the place of meeting, in which they frequently took the deer alive.

Their chief objects of cultivation were corn, beans, pumpkins, squashes and melons, which were all indigenous plants. Their fields were cleared by burning the trees in the autumn. Their season for planting was when the leaves of the oak were as large as the ear of a mouse. From this observation was formed the rule of the first settlers.

When the white oak trees look goslin grey,  
Plant then, be it April, June, or May.

The corn was hoed with large clam shells, and harvested in cellars dug in the ground, and enclosed with mats. When boiled in kernels it was called samp; when parched and pounded in stone mortars it was termed nokehike; and when pounded and boiled, it was called hominy. They also boiled corn and beans together, which they called succatash. They formed earthen vessels in which they cooked. They made an excellent cake, by mixing strawberries with parched corn. Whortleberries were employed in a similar manner. Some of their dishes are still well known, and highly relished—their samp, their hominy or hasty pudding, their stewed beans or succatash, their baked pumpkins, their parched corn, their boiled and roast ears of corn, and their wortleberry cake—dishes which, when well prepared, are good enough for any body. And when to these were added the whole range of field and flood, at a time when wild fowl and venison were more than abundant, it will be seen that the Indians lived well.

The woods were filled with wild animals—foxes, bears, wolves, deer, moose, beaver, raccoons, rabbits, woodchucks, and squirrels—most of which have long since departed. One of the most troublesome animals was the catamount, one of the numerous varieties of the cat kind, which has never been particularly described. It was from three to six feet in length, and commonly of a cinnamon color. Many stories are related of its attacks upon the early settlers, by climbing trees and leaping upon them when travelling through the forest. An Indian in passing through the woods one day, heard a rustling in the boughs overhead, and

looking up, saw a catamount preparing to spring upon him. He said he 'cry all one soosuck' — that is, like a child — knowing that if he did not kill the catamount, he must lose his own life. He fired as the animal was in the act of springing, which met the ball and fell dead at his feet.

The wild pigeons are represented to have been so numerous that they passed in flocks so large as to 'obscure the light.' Dudley says, 'it passeth credit if but the truth should be known;' and Wood says, they continued flying for four or five hours together, to such an extent that one could see 'neither beginning nor ending, length nor breadth, of these millions of millions.' When they alighted in the woods, they frequently broke down large limbs of trees by their weight, and the crashing was heard at a great distance. A single family has been known to have killed more than one hundred dozen in one night, with poles and other weapons; and they were often taken in such numbers that they were thrown into piles, and kept to feed the swine. The Indians called the pigeon wuscowan, a word signifying a wanderer. The wild fowl were so numerous in the waters, that persons sometimes killed '50 Duckes at a shot.'

The Indians appear to have been very fond of amusements. The tribes, even from a great distance, were accustomed to challenge each other, and to assemble upon Lynn Beach to decide their contests. Here they sometimes passed many days in the exercises of running, leaping, wrestling, shooting, and other diversions. Before they began their sports, they drew a line in the sand, across which the parties shook hands in evidence of friendship, and they sometimes painted their faces, to prevent revenge. A tall pole was then planted in the beach, on which were hung beaver skins, wampum, and other articles, for which they contended; and frequently, all they were worth was ventured in the play. One of their games was foot-ball. Another was called puim, which was played by shuffling together many small sticks, and contending for them. Another game was played with five flat pieces of bone, black on one side and white on the other. These were put into a wooden bowl, which was struck on the ground, causing the bones to bound aloft, and as they fell white or black, the game was decided. During this play, the Indians sat in a circle, making a great noise, by the constant repetition of the word *hub, hub*, — come, come, — from which it was called hubbub; a word, the derivation of which seems greatly to have puzzled Dr. Johnson.

The Indians believed in a Great Spirit, whom they called Kichtan, who made all the other gods, and one man and woman. The evil spirit they called Hobamock. They endured the most acute pains without a murmur, and seldom laughed loud. They cultivated a kind of natural music, and had their war and death



songs. The women had lullabies and melodies for their children, and modulated their voices by the songs of birds. Some early writers represent the voices of their females, when heard through the shadowy woods, to have been exquisitely harmonious. It has been said they had no poets, but their whole language was a poem. What more poetical than calling the roar of the ocean on the Beach, *Sawkiss*, or great panting? — literally, the noise which a tired animal makes when spent in the chase. What more poetical than naming a boy *Poquannum*, or Dark Skin; and a girl *Wanapaquin*, a Plume? Every word of the Indians was expressive, and had a meaning. Such is natural poetry in all ages. The Welsh called their great king Arthur, from *aruthr*, terribly fair; and such was *Alonzo*, the name of the Moorish kings of Spain, from an Arabic word signifying the fountain of beauty. When we give our children the names of gems and flowers — when we use language half as designative as that of the Indians, we may begin to talk of poetry. ‘I am an aged hemlock,’ said one, ‘whose head has been whitened by eighty snows!’ ‘We will brighten the chain of our friendship with you,’ said the chiefs in their treaties. The Indians reckoned their time by snows and moons. A snow was a winter; and thus, a man who had seen eighty snows, was eighty years of age. A moon was a month; thus they had the harvest moon, the hunting moon, and the moon of flowers. A sleep was a night; and seven sleeps were seven days. This figurative language is in the highest degree poetical and beautiful.

The Indians have ever been distinguished for friendship, justice, magnanimity, and a high sense of honor. They have been represented by some as insensible and brutish, but, with the exception of their revenge, they were not an insensate race. The old chief, who requested permission of the white people to smoke one more whiff before he was slaughtered, was thought to be an unfeeling wretch; but he expressed more than he could have done by the most eloquent speech. The red people received the emigrants in a friendly manner, and taught them how to plant; and when any of the whites travelled through the woods, they entertained them with more kindness than compliments, kept them freely many days, and often went ten, and even twenty miles, to conduct them on their way. The Rev. Roger Williams says: ‘They were remarkably free and courteous to invite all strangers in. I have reaped kindness again from many, seven years after, whom I myself had forgotten. It is a strange truth, that a man shall generally find more free entertainment and refreshment among these barbarians, than among thousands that call themselves Christians.’

The scene which presented itself to the first settlers, must have been in the highest degree interesting and beautiful. The

light birchen canoes of the red men were seen gracefully swimming over the surface of the bright blue ocean; the half clad females were beheld, bathing their olive limbs in the lucid flood, or sporting on the smooth beach, and gathering the spotted eggs from their little hollows in the sands, or the beautiful shells, which abounded among the pebbles, to string into beads or weave into wampum, for the adornment of their necks and arms. At one time an Indian was seen with his bow, silently endeavoring to transfix the wild duck or the brant, as they rose and sunk on the alternate waves; and at another, a glance was caught of the timid wild deer, rushing through the shadow of the dark green oaks; or the sly fox, bounding from rock to rock among the high cliffs of Nahant, and stealing along the shore to find his evening repast, which the tide had left upon the beach. The little sand-pipers darted along the thin edge of the wave — the white gulls in hundreds soared screaming overhead — and the curlews filled the echoes of the rocks with their wild and watery music. This is no imaginary picture, wrought up for the embellishment of a fanciful tale, — but the delineation of an actual scene, which presented itself to the eyes of our fathers.

An incident respecting the Indians, about a year before the settlement of Lynn, is related by Rev. Thomas Cobbet, in a letter to Increase Mather. 'About the year 1628, when those few that came over with Colonel Indicot and begun to settle at Nahumkeek, now called Salem, and in a manner all so sick of their journey, that though they had both small and great guns, and powder and bullets for them, yet had not strength to manage them, if suddenly put upon it; and tidings being certainly brought them, on a Lord's day morning, that a thousand Indians from Saugust, (now called Lyn,) were coming against them to cut them off, they had much ado amongst them all to charge two or three of theyre great guns, and traile them to a place of advantage; where the Indians must pass to them, and there to shoot them off; when they heard by theyre noise which they made in the woods, that the Indians drew neare, the noise of which great Artillery, to which the Indians were never wonted before, did occasionally, by the good hand of God, strike such dread into them, that by some lads who lay as scouts in the woods, they were heard to reiterate that confused outcrie, (O Hobbamock, much Hoggery,) and then fled confusedly back with all speed, when none pursued them. One old Button,\* lately living at Haverhill, who was then almost the only haile man left of that company, confirmed this to be so to me, accordingly as I formerly had been informed of it.'

---

\* Matthias Button, a Dutchman, who lived in a thatched house in Haverhill, in 1670. So says Mr. Joshua Coffin, who is now compiling a curious manuscript History of Newbury.



There were but few towns planted in Massachusetts before the settlement of Lynn. In 1622, a plantation was begun at Weymouth. In 1624, the Rev. William Blackstone, with his family, established himself at Boston. In 1625, a settlement was begun at Braintree; in 1626, at Salem; and in 1727, at Charlestown. On the nineteenth of March, 1628, the Council in England sold all that part of Massachusetts, between three miles north of Merrimack River, and three miles south of Charles River, to six gentlemen, one of whom was Mr. John Humfrey, who afterward came to Lynn.



Boniface Burton. Aged 113 years. Page 63.

### CHAPTER III.

Settlement of Lynn — Early Inhabitants — Thomas Dexter buys Nahant for a suit of clothes — Occupation of the People — Descriptive Ballad — Town incorporated — Trouble about wolves — Quarrel between Dexter and Endecott — Montowampate goes to England — Wenuchus, his Queen, taken prisoner by the Taratines — 1629 to 1631.

Love thou thy land, with love far brought  
From out the storied past.

TENNYSON.



LYNN is one of the earliest towns planted in Massachusetts. Its settlement was begun in 1629. Among the authorities for assigning the settlement to this year, is the Rev. Samuel Danforth's almanac for the year 1647. He gives a list of the first towns settled in this state, to which he prefixes these words: 'The time when these townes following began — Lynn, 1629.' By several ancient manuscripts, it appears that the settlement must have commenced as early as the first of June.

**1629.** The first white men known to have been inhabitants of Lynn, were Edmund Ingalls and his brother Francis Ingalls. A record preserved in the family of the former says, 'Mr. Edmund Ingalls came from Lincolnshire, in England, to Lynn, in 1629.' He was a farmer, and settled in the eastern part of the town, near a small pond in Fayette street. The place where his house stood is still pointed out by his descendants. He had a malt house near the margin of the pond. When the lands were divided, in 1638, there were apportioned 'to Edmund and Francis Ingalls, upland and meadow, 120 acres.' He was accidentally drowned, in March, 1648, by falling with his horse through the old Saugus river bridge, on Boston street; for which the General Court paid one hundred pounds (\$444) to his children. His estate was valued at £135 8s. 10d., including 'house and lands, £50.' The name of his wife was Ann, and he had nine children, six of whom were born in England. 1. Robert, who inherited his father's 'house and houselot.' 2. Elizabeth. 3. Faith, who married Andrew Allen. 4. John, to whom his father gave 'the house and ground that was Jeremy ffits, (Fitch,) lying by the meetinghouse, and that three acres land he



hath in England.' 5. Sarah, who married William Bitnar. 6. Henry, who was born in 1627, and removed to Andover, where he died in 1719, aged 92 years. A descendant of his, Captain Henry Ingalls, died in 1803, aged 84 years. About a year before his death, he added the following note to the family genealogy. 'Mr. Henry Ingals, from whom all these spring, was born in the year 1627, and he died in the year 1719, who lived ninety-two years, and two months after his death, I Henry Ingals was Born, who have lived eighty-three years, So that we two Henry Ingals hath Lived on this Earth one hundred and seventy five years.' 7. Samuel. 8. Mary. 9. Joseph. The descendants of Mr. Edmund Ingalls, in this and other towns, are numerous and respectable, and several of them eminent in the learned professions.

Francis Ingalls, brother of Edmund, was born in England in 1601. He was a tanner, and lived at Swampscot. He built a tannery on Humfrey's brook, where it is crossed by a stone bridge in Burrill street. I saw the vats before they were taken up in 1825. This was the first tannery in New England.

William Dixey was born in England in 1607, and came over a servant with Mr. Isaac Johnson. On his arrival at Salem, he says that application was made for him and others, 'for a place to set down in; upon which Mr. Endecott did give me and the rest leave to go where we would; upon which we went to Saugust, now Linne, and there wee met with Sagamore James and som other Indians, who did give me and the rest leaue to dwell there or thereabouts; whereupon I and the rest of my master's company did cutt grass for our cattell, and kept them upon Nahant for som space of time; for the Indian James Sagamore and the rest did give me and the rest, in behalf of my master Johnson, what land we would; whereupon wee sett down in Saugust, and had quiet possession of it by the abovesaid Indians, and kept our cattell in Nahant the sumer following.\* Mr. Dixey was admitted a freeman at the first General Court in 1634. He removed to Salem, and kept a ferry-boat across the North River.†

William Wood came to Lynn in 1629, and was admitted a freeman May 18, 1631. He resided here, according to his own account, about 'four years,' and during that time he wrote an interesting work, entitled 'Nevv England's Prospect,' containing a very favorable account of the early settlements. On the fifteenth of August, 1633, he sailed with Captain Thomas Graves, for London; where, in 1634, he printed his book, in one hundred pages. In 1635, he published a map of New England, engraved on wood. He returned to Lynn the same year. He

---

\* Deposition in Essex Court Archives, July 1, 1657.

† Felt's Annals of Salem.

embarked on the eleventh of September, in the Hopewell, of London, being then 27 years of age ; bringing with him his wife, Elizabeth, aged 24 years.\* In 1636, he was chosen representative. In 1637, he went with a company of about fifty men, and commenced a settlement at Sandwich. He was chosen town clerk there, and was a very active, intelligent, and talented man. His book is one of the most interesting and valuable which was written at that early period, and several extracts from it will be found in these pages.

John Wood was a farmer, and lived on the corner of Essex and North streets, the same place now owned by Nathaniel Lewis. When the lands were divided, in 1638, one hundred acres were allotted to him. I think that William Wood, the writer, was his son, and William Wood of Salem, his brother.

Such was the little band who commenced the first settlement in the wilderness of Lynn. Five men, with their families, probably comprising about twenty persons. They did not settle at Sagamore Hill, because the Indians were there ; nor on the Common, because that was a forest ; but coming from Salem, they selected a ' faire playne,' somewhat less than half a mile in extent, where they built their rude cottages, 'and had peaceable possession.' John Wood appears to have been the principal person, and from him the village has ever since been called ' Wood End.' There the soil of Lynn was first stirred by the white men — there, surrounded by Indians, they laid the foundation of a town.

**1630.** Early in the spring, eleven vessels, having on board about seventeen hundred persons, left the harbor of Southampton, and sailed for New England. In the number of the passengers were Mr. John Winthrop, the first governor of Massachusetts, with many other persons of dignity, wealth, and reputation. As Mr. Humfrey, who had been chosen deputy governor, was not ready to remove, Mr. Thomas Dudley was chosen in his stead. In the month of June, the ships arrived at Salem, and the passengers began to make settlements in the pathless woods. Mr. Dudley says that some of them settled 'upon the river of Saugus.' Others went to Charlestown and Boston ; and the rest began new settlements at Roxbury, Dorchester, Watertown, and Medford. The Council had agreed that each person who advanced fifty pounds, should have two hundred acres ; and that each one who came over on his own expense, should have fifty acres. The following persons appear to have arrived at Lynn this year.

Joseph Armitage lived on the Common, opposite the Acade-

---

\* Records in Westminster Hall, London.



1576  
1679  
1776

my, and his land extended to Strawberry Brook. He was a tailor, and was admitted a freeman in 1637. Some years after, he became the proprietor of a corn and slitting mill on Saugus River.\* He opened the first tavern in the town, called the Anchor.† It stood on the Boston road, a little west of the river. For one hundred and seventy years, this was the most celebrated tavern in Essex county, being half way from Salem to Boston. He died June 27, 1680, aged eighty years. His wife, Jane, died March 3, 1677. His children were John, and Rebecca, who married Samuel Tarbox, in 1665.

Godfrey Armitage was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman in 1638.

James Axey was a farmer, a representative in 1654, and died in 1669. His wife, Frances, died the same year.

Allen Breed was a farmer, and lived in the western part of Summer street. In 1638, he had two hundred acres of land allotted to him. He was born in 1601. The name of his wife was Elizabeth, and his children were Allen, Timothy, Joseph, and John. His descendants are numerous, and from him the village in which he resided was called Breed's End.

William Bullard was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman in 1638. In the same year he was a member of the Essex Court. His children were John, Nathaniel, and Elizabeth.

George Burrill lived on the western side of Willis's Hill. He was a farmer, and had 200 acres of land. He had three sons: George; Francis, born 1626, died November 10, 1704; and John, born 1631, died April 24, 1703.

Edward Baker was a farmer, and lived on the south side of Baker's Hill, in Saugus. He was admitted a freeman in 1638; and was buried March 16, 1687. His wife, Joan, died April 9, 1693. His sons were Edward, who married Mary Marshall, April 7, 1675; and Thomas, who married Mary Lewis, July 10, 1689.

Samuel Bennet was a carpenter, and a member of the Ancient Artillery Company in 1639. A pine forest in the northern part of the town, still retains the name of Bennet's Swamp. He resided in the western part of Saugus, and when the towns were divided, the line passed through his land, eastward of his house, so that afterward he was called an inhabitant of Boston.

Nicholas Brown was a farmer, and lived in Walnut street, in Saugus. He removed to Reading in 1644. He had a son, Thomas, who continued at Lynn, and died August 28, 1693. His descendants remain.

Boniface Burton was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman May 6, 1635. He was the oldest man who ever lived at Lynn. He died June 13, 1669, aged 113 years.‡

---

\* Essex Reg Deeds.

† Mass. Archives.

‡ Sewall.

John Bancroft died in 1637. He had two sons, Thomas and John, and his descendants remain.

Thomas Coldam was admitted a freeman in 1634. He kept Mr. Humfrey's windmill on Sagamore Hill; and died April 8, 1675, aged 74 years.

Clement Coldam was a miller, and a member of the Ancient Artillery Company in 1645. He had a son Clement, born in 1622, who removed to Gloucester, and died in 1703.

Thomas Chadwell was a farmer, and lived in Summer street. He died in February, 1683. His sons were Thomas, Moses, and Benjamin. His descendants remain.

William Cowdrey, born in 1602, was a farmer. He removed to Reading in 1640; where he was Clerk of the Writs, Town Clerk, Selectman, and Representative.

Thomas Dexter was a farmer, and lived on the west of Saugus river, near the iron works. He was admitted a freeman, May 18, 1631. He owned eight hundred acres of land, and was called, by way of excellence, 'Farmer Dexter.' He was a very active and enterprising man, and built a mill, and a wear across Saugus River. Among his speculations, he purchased Nahant of the Indian chief, Poquanum, called 'Black Will,' for a suit of clothes; which occasioned the town an expensive law-suit in 1657, another in 1678, and a third in 1695. He became one of the first proprietors of the town of Sandwich in 1637, and promoted its settlement, but did not remove at that time. He had a son Thomas, a grandson Richard, and a great grandson William; but none of his descendants remain at Lynn.

Robert Driver was a farmer, and lived in Shepard street, on the south of which a creek still bears his name. He was made a freeman in 1635, and died April 3, 1680, aged 88 years. His wife, Phebe, died in February, 1683. He had a son, Robert, who was a soldier in the Indian war of 1675.

William Edmunds was admitted a freeman in 1635, and died August 4, 1693, aged 33 years. His children were John; and Samuel, who married Elizabeth Bridges, January 27, 1685.

George Farr was a farmer in the eastern part of Essex street. He was admitted a freeman in 1635, and died in 1661. His wife Elizabeth was buried March 11, 1687. His children were John, Lazarus, Benjamin, Joseph, Mary, Martha, Elizabeth, and Sarah.

Henry Feake was admitted a freeman, May 14, 1632, and removed to Sandwich in 1637.

Jeremiah Fitch was a farmer, and lived in Shepard street. He removed to Reading in 1644.

Samuel Graves was a farmer, and lived on the turnpike, west of the Floating Bridge, and from him that village has ever since



been called Graves End. In 1635, he gave nearly £300 to the colony. He had a son Samuel, and his descendants remain.

Adam Hawkes was a farmer, and settled on the Hawkes Farms in Saugus. He owned the land where the iron ore was found, and filled up one of the mines, on the supposition that it contained silver. Soon after his settlement, his house was burnt. The only persons in it at the time, were a servant girl and two twin infants, who escaped. He died in 1671. His sons were Adam, John, Moses, Benjamin, and Thomas. His descendants remain.

John Hawkes was admitted a freeman in 1634, and died August 5, 1694.

John Hall was admitted a freeman in 1634. Edward Hall, son of John, was a farmer, and died in 1669. His children were Joseph, Ephraim, Elizabeth, Rebecca and Martha. His descendants remain.

Thomas Hubbard was admitted a freeman in 1634, and removed to Billerica.

Edward Holyoke was a farmer, and had five hundred acres of land. He was a member of the Essex Court, and was many times chosen representative. In 1656 he owned the western side of Sagamore Hill. He died May 4, 1660. His estate was valued at £681. His farm in Lynn, £400; his farm at Beaver Dam, in Reading, £150; three acres of land on Nahant, £6; two oxen, £12; four cows, £16; and his books, £20; among which were some valuable manuscripts. In his will, he be-seeches God to impress his children with the importance of private prayer and public worship, and bequeaths each of them a lock of his hair. His children were, 1. Elizur, who removed to Springfield, and married Mary Pynchon; 2. Elizabeth, who married George Keyser. An excellent spring, in the western part of the town, surrounded by five willows, is well known by the name of Holyoke spring. A descendant of his, Edward Augustus Holyoke, an eminent physician, died at Salem, March 31, 1829, aged one hundred years and seven months.

Edward Howe was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman in 1636. He was several times chosen representative, and was a member of the Essex Court in 1637. In April, 1639, after the court was ended in Boston, having dined in his usual health, he went to the river side, to pass over to Charlestown, and while waiting for the ferry boat, fell dead on the shore. Governor Winthrop says he was 'a Godly man.' He had a son Edward.

Lieutenant Daniel Howe, brother of Edward, was admitted a freeman in 1634. He was representative in five courts, and a member of the Ancient Artillery Company in 1638. He removed to New Haven. His son Ephraim was master of a vessel which

sailed from Boston. In September, 1676, his vessel, in which were two of his sons and three other persons, was disabled by a storm, off Cape Cod, and driven to sea for several weeks, until his two sons, lashed to the deck by ropes, perished with wet and cold. The vessel was then cast on a desolate island, where the three other persons died. Mr. Howe was thus left alone, and found means to subsist for nine months, lodging and praying in a cave, till he was taken off by a vessel, in June.

William Hathorne was born in England in 1607, was admitted a freeman in 1634, and removed to Salem.

Thomas Hudson was a farmer, and lived on the western side of Saugus river. He owned the lands where the iron works were situated, part of which he sold for that purpose. He had a son Jonathan, whose descendants remain.

Christopher Hussey was born at Darking, in Surrey, England, in 1598. He went to Holland, where he became enamored of Theodate, daughter of Rev. Stephen Bachiler, who had resided there several years, but her father would not consent to their union, unless Mr. Hussey would remove to New England, whither he was preparing to go. Mr. Hussey came to Lynn with his mother, widow Mary Hussey, and his wife, in 1630, and here, the same year, his son Stephen was born, who was the second white child born in Lynn. He removed to Newbury in 1636, and was chosen representative in 1637. In 1638, he became one of the first settlers of Hampton, and was chosen a counsellor. In 1685, he was cast away and lost on the coast of Florida, being 87 years of age. His children were Stephen, John, Joseph, Huldah, Theodate, and Mary.

George Keyser, born 1616, was a tanner at Swampscot, and was admitted a freeman in 1638. He married Elizabeth Holyoke, and had a son Elizur, who removed to Salem.

Christopher Lyndsey lived as a servant with Thomas Dexter, and kept his cattle on Nahant. A hill on the northeastern part of Nahant is still called Lyndsey's Hill. He died in 1668. He had two sons, John and Eleazer, and his descendants remain.

Thomas Newhall was a farmer, and owned all the lands on the eastern side of Federal street. His house stood in the same place with that of Mr. Amos Rhodes. He had two sons. 1. John, born in England. 2. Thomas, born in 1630, who was the first white child born in Lynn. He married Elizabeth Potter, December 29, 1652, and was buried April 1, 1687, aged 57 years. His wife was buried February 22, 1687. His children were Thomas, John, Joseph, Nathaniel, Elisha, Elizabeth, Mary, Samuel, and Rebecca. His descendants are more numerous than those of any other name at Lynn, and there are many in the adjacent towns.



Jonathan Negus was born in 1601, and was admitted a freeman in 1634.

Robert Potter was a farmer, and lived in Boston street. He was admitted a freeman in 1634. He had a daughter Elizabeth.

John Ramsdell was a farmer, and died October 27, 1688, aged 86 years. His wife, Priscilla, died January 23, 1675. His sons were John and Aquila, and his descendants remain.

Edward Richards, born 1616, was 'a joiner,' and was admitted a freeman in 1641. He lived in the eastern part of Essex street. On the third of April, 1646, he sold to Daniel King, 'one parcel of land, called Windmill Hill,' being the eastern mound of Sagamore Hill. He died January 26, 1690, aged 74 years. His descendants remain.

Joseph Rednap was a wine cooper, from London, and was admitted a freeman in 1634. Judge Sewall, in his Diary, says, he died on Friday, January 23, 1686, aged 110 years.

1636 Daniel Salmon, born in 1610, was a soldier in the Pequod war, in 1536. He had a son Daniel, born May 2, 1665.

Samuel Smith was a farmer, and lived at Swampscot. His descendants remain.

John Smith was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman in 1633. He removed to Reading.

John Taylor came from Haverhill, in England. His wife and child died on the passage. He was admitted a freeman, October 19, 1630, and lived on the western side of Saugus river.

Captain Edward Tomlins was a carpenter, and was admitted a freeman in 1631. He was six times chosen representative. In 1633, he built the first mill in Lynn, at the mouth of Strawberry brook, which flows from the Flax Pond, where Chase's mill now stands. At one of the courts he agreed to repair Mistick bridge for £22. In 1638 he was a member of the Ancient Artillery Company. In 1640, he went to Long Island, but returned to Lynn, and was appointed Clerk of the Writs in 1643. His son Edward came over in 1635, at the age of 30; but returned to London in 1644, and in 1679 was at Dublin.

Timothy Tomlins, brother of Edward, was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman 1633. He was representative in thirteen sessions of the General Court. In 1640, he went with those who began a settlement at Southampton, on Long Island, but returned. A pine forest in the northern part of the town is well known by the name of Tomlin's Swamp. He was one of the first proprietors of Cambridge, but did not reside there.

Captain Nathaniel Turner lived in Nahant street, and owned the whole of Sagamore Hill. He applied to be admitted a freeman October 19, 1630, but did not take the oath until July 3, 1632. He was representative in the first seven sessions of the General Court, and a member of the first County Court at Salem

in 1636. In 1633, he was appointed Captain of the Militia, and in 1636 and 1637 had a command in several expeditions against the Pequod Indians. In 1637 his house was burnt. In 1638, he became a member of the Ancient Artillery Company; and the same year sold his land on Sagamore Hill to Mr. Edward Holyoke, and removed, with others, to Quilipeake, where a new settlement was begun, and called New Haven. His name is preserved in Turner's Falls. In 1639, he was one of the seven members of the first church at New Haven. In 1640, he purchased for the town, of Ponus, the Indian Sagamore, the tract of land which is now the town of Stamford, for which he paid in 'coats, shoes, hatchets, &c.' His active and useful life was soon after terminated in a melancholy manner. In January, 1646, he sailed for England, with Captain Lamberton, in a vessel which was never heard of more. Governor Winthrop informs us, that in June, 1648, the apparition of a ship was seen, under full sail, moving up the harbor of New Haven, a little before sunset, in a pleasant afternoon, and that as it approached the shore, it slowly vanished. This was thought to have a reference to the fate of Captain Lamberton's ship. The following epitaph was written to the memory of Captain Turner :

Deep in Atlantic cave his body sleeps,  
While the dark sea its ceaseless motion keeps,  
While phantom ships are wrecked along the shore,  
To warn his friends that he will come no more!  
But He who governs all with impulse free,  
Can bring from Bashan and the deepest sea,  
And when He calls our Turner must return,  
Though now his ashes fill no sacred urn.

Thomas Talmadge was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman 1634. He had a son Thomas.

Captain Richard Walker was a farmer, and resided on the west of Saugus river. He was born in 1593; and was admitted a freeman in 1634. He was buried May 16, 1687, aged 95 years. He had two sons; Richard, born 1611, who came over in 1635, removed to Reading, and was several times chosen representative; and Samuel, who removed to Reading. He also had two daughters; Tabitha, who married Daniel King, March 11, 1662; and Elizabeth, who married Ralph King, March 2, 1663.

Thomas Willis was a farmer, and the first resident on Willis's Hill, on which the poor-house is situated. The land on the south was called Willis's Neck, and that on the north Willis's meadow. He was a representative in the first General Court in 1634, and a member of the Essex Court in 1639. He became one of the first proprietors of Sandwich in 1637, but did not remove at that time.



Bray Wilkins was a farmer, and lived on the western side of the Flax Pond. He was admitted a freeman in 1634, and removed to Danvers.

John White was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman in 1633.

William Witter was a farmer, and resided at Swampscot. He lived on the spot where Joseph Blaney's house now stands. He says, 'Blacke will, or duke william, so called, came to my house, (which was two or three miles from Nahant,) when Thomas Dexter had bought Nahant for a suit of clothes; the said Black will Asked me what I would give him for the Land my house stood vppon, it being his land, and his ffather's wigwam stood their abouts, James Sagomore and John, and the Sagomore of Agawame, and diuers more, And George Sagomore, being a youth was present, all of them acknowlidginge Black will to be the Right owner of the Land my house stood on, and Sagomore Hill and Nahant was all his;' and adds 'that he bought Nahant and Sagomer Hill and Swamscoate of Black William for two pestle stones.'\* He died in 1659, aged 75 years. The name of his wife was Annis, and his children were Josiah, and Hannah, who married Robert Burdin. By his will, August 6, 1657, he gives his wife Annis half his estate, and Josiah the other half; and says, 'Hannah shall have a yew and lamb this time twelf mounth.'

Captain Richard Wright was selected in 1632, to confer with the governor about raising a public fund. He was admitted a freeman in 1634. He removed to Boston, where, in 1636, he contributed 6s. 8d. 'towards the maintenance of a free school-master.'†

The great body of fifty persons, with their families, who came to Lynn this year, settled in all parts of the town, selecting the most eligible portions, and each occupying from ten to two hundred acres, and some more. They were principally farmers, and possessed a large stock of horned cattle, sheep and goats. For several years, before the land was divided, and the fields fenced, the cattle were fed in one drove, and guarded by a man, who, from his employment, was called a hayward. The sheep, goats and swine were kept on Nahant, where they were tended by a shepherd. Nahant seems to have been sold several times, to different individuals, by 'Black William,' who also gave it to the plantation for a sheep pasture. A fence of rails, put near together, was made across the beach near Nahant, to keep out the wolves, as those animals do not climb. When the people were about building this fence, Captain Turner said, 'Let us

---

\* Deposition in Salem Court files, 15th and 27th April, 1657.

† Boston Records.

make haste, lest the country should take it from us.\* The people of Lynn, for some years, appear to have lived in the most perfect democracy. They had town meetings every three months, for the regulation of their public affairs. They cut their wood in common, and drew lots for the grass in the meadows and marshes. These proved very serviceable to the farmers, by furnishing them with sustenance for their cattle; which was probably the reason why there were more farmers at Lynn, than in any other of the early settlements. Mr. Johnson says, 'The chiefest corn they planted, before they had plowes, was Indian grain—and let no man make a jest at Pumpkins, for with this food the Lord was pleased to feed his people to their good content, till Corne and Cattell were increased.' Their corn at the first, was pounded, after the manner of the Indians, with a pestle of wood or stone, in mortar made either of stone, or a log hollowed out at one end. They also cultivated large fields of barley and wheat. Much of the former was made into malt for beer. They raised considerable quantities of flax, which was rotted in one of the ponds, thence called the Flax Pond. Their first houses were rude structures, covered with thatch, or small bundles of sedge or straw, laid one over another. A common form of the early cottages, was eighteen feet square, and seven feet post, with the roof steep enough to form a sleeping chamber. The better houses were built with two stories in front, and sloped down to one in the rear; the upper story projecting about a foot, with very sharp gables. The frames were of heavy oak timber, showing the beams inside. Burnt clamshells were used for lime, and the walls were whitewashed. The fire-places were made of rough stones, and the chimneys of boards, or short sticks, crossing each other, and plaistered inside with clay. The windows were small, opening outward on hinges. They consisted of very small diamond panes, set in sashes of lead. The fire-places were large enough to admit a four-foot log, and the children might sit in the corners and look up at the stars. People commonly burnt about twenty cords of wood in a year, and the ministers were allowed thirty cords. On whichever side of the road the houses were placed, they uniformly faced the south, that the sun at noon might 'shine square.' Thus each house formed a domestic sun-dial, by which the good matron, in the absence of the clock, could tell, in fair weather, when to call her husband and sons from the field; for the industrious people of Lynn, then as well as now, always dined exactly at twelve. It was the custom of the first settlers to wear long beards, and Governor Winthrop says, 'Some had their overgrown beards so frozen together, that they

---

\* Deposition in Salem Court Records, April 22, 1657.



could not get their strong water bottells into their mouths.' In very hot weather, says Wood, 'servants were priviledged to rest from their labors, from ten of the clocke till two.' The common address of men and women was Goodman and Goodwife; none but those who sustained some office of dignity, or were descended from some respectable family, were complimented with the title of Master. In writing, they seldom used a capital F, and thus in the early records we find two small ones used instead; and one m, with a dash over it, stood for two. The following ballad, written about this time, exhibits some of the peculiar customs and modes of thinking among the early settlers.

## NEW ENGLAND BALLAD.

## I.

THE place where we live is a wilderness wood,  
Where grass is much wanting that 's fruitful and good;  
Our mountains and hills, and our valleys below,  
Being commonly covered with ice and with snow.  
And when the northwest wind with violence blows,  
Then every man pulls his cap over his nose;  
But if any is hardy, and will it withstand,  
He forfeits a finger, a foot, or a hand.

## II.

And when the spring opens, we then take the hoe,  
And make the ground ready to plant and to sow;  
Our corn being planted, and seed being sown,  
The worms destroy much before it is grown;  
And while it is growing, some spoil there is made  
By birds and by squirrels, who pluck up the blade;  
And when it is come to full corn in the ear,  
It is often destroyed by raccoon and by deer.

## III.

And now our old garments begin to grow thin,  
And wool is much wanted to card and to spin;  
If we can get a garment to cover without,  
Our other in garments are clout [patch] upon patch.  
Our clothes we brought with us are apt to be torn,  
They need to be clouted soon after they 're worn;  
But clouting our garments they hinder us nothing,  
Clouts double are warmer than single whole clothing.

## IV.

If fresh meat be wanting to fill up our dish,  
We have carrots and pumpkins, and turnips and fish;  
And if there 's a mind for a delicate dish,  
We haste to the clam banks and take what we wish.  
Stead of pottage and puddings and custards and pies,  
Our turnips and parsnips are common supplies;  
We have pumpkins at morning, and pumpkins at noon,  
If it was not for pumpkins we should be undone.

## V.

[Stead of brandy and whiskey and cider and gin,  
We have liquor which all may partake without sin;  
Our springs of fresh water are excellent cheer,  
And fill up the places of porter and beer.]  
If barley be wanting to make into malt,  
We must then be contented and think it no fault;  
For we can make liquor to sweeten our lips,  
Of pumpkins and parsnips and walnut tree chips.

## VI.

Now while some are going let others be coming,  
For while liquor's boiling it must have a scumming;  
But I will not blame them, for birds of a feather,  
By seeking their fellows, are flocking together.  
Then you whom the Lord intends hither to bring,  
Forsake not the honey for fear of the sting;  
But bring both a quiet and contented mind,  
And all needful blessings you surely shall find.

The General Court, for the first four years, consisted of the Governor, Deputy Governor, twelve Assistants, or magistrates, and all who had obtained the privileges of freemen. Instead, therefore, of sending representatives, the whole number of freemen attended the Court in person. An order was made, that no persons should be admitted to the privileges of 'freemen,' but such as were members of some church, and had certificates from their ministers that their opinions were approved. This policy continued, till it was abrogated by an order from king Charles II., in 1662.

Lynn was incorporated in 1630, by the admission of its freemen as members of the General Court. There were no acts of incorporation for several of the early towns. Boston, Salem, and Charlestown were no otherwise incorporated, than by their freemen taking their seats in the General Court. They never paused to inquire if they were incorporated; the very act of their being there was an incorporation. The freemen of Lynn were an important and respectable portion of the General Court, and Lynn was as much incorporated in 1630 as Boston was. The injustice which has been done to Lynn, by placing its incorporation seven years too late, should be corrected.

The following order was passed by the General Court, for regulating the prices of labor. 'It is ordered, that no master carpenter, mason, joiner, or bricklayer shall take above 16d. a Day for their work, if they have meate and Drinke; and the second sort not above 12d. a Day, under payne of Xs. both to giver and receiver.' This order probably occasioned some dissatisfaction; as the Court, some months after, determined that wages should be left unlimited, 'as men shall reasonably agree.'

The Indians, having become acquainted with the use of guns,



and having seen their superiority over bows and arrows, would give almost any amount in land, beaver skins, or wampum for them. This caused an apprehension of danger, and on the twenty-eighth of September, the Court ordered, that 'noe person whatsoever shall, either directly or indirectly, imploy or cause to be employed, or to their power permit any Indian to vse any peece vpon any occasion or pretence whatsoever, under pain of Xs. ffyne for the first offence, and for the 2 offence to be ffyned and imprisoned at the discretion of the Court.'

A company of militia was organized, of which Richard Wright was captain, Daniel Howe lieutenant, and Richard Walker ensign. The officers were not chosen by the people, but appointed by the governor. The company possessed two iron cannon, called 'sakers, or great guns.'

There is a story that two of the early settlers went to Nahant for fowl, and separated. One of them killed a seal on Pond Beach, and, leaving him, went after some birds. When he returned, he found a bear feeding on his seal. He fired at him a charge of shot, which caused him to fall, and then beat him with his six foot gun till it broke. The bear then stood up, wounded the man, and tore his clothes; but the man, extricating himself, ran into the pond, where he remained until his companion came and relieved him. They then returned to the town and informed the people, who went down in the evening and made a fire on the beach, which they kept burning through the night, to prevent the bear from coming off. In the morning, they went to Nahant and killed him.

Much mischief was occasioned among the cattle, for many years, by the wolves, which, Wood says, used to travel in companies of 'ten or twelve.' On the thirteenth of September, says Winthrop, 'the wolves killed some swine at Saugus.' On the ninth of November, the Court ordered, that if any one killed a wolf, he should have one penny for each cow and horse, and one farthing for each sheep and swine in the plantation. Many pits were dug in the woods to entrap them, and some of them are yet to be seen. It is said that a woman, as she was rambling in the woods for berries, fell into one of these pits, from which she was unable to extricate herself. In the evening, a wolf made her a very unceremonious visit, dropping down at her side, through the bushes with which the pit was covered. Finding himself entrapped, and being as much afraid of the woman as she was of him, he retired to the opposite corner of the pit; and thus they remained through the night, ogling each other with any looks but those of an enamored couple. The next day, the friends of the woman arrived at the pit, from which they took her without injury, and prevented any future visit from her rude and unwelcome intruder.

**1631.** In the early part of this year, provisions were very scarce, and many persons depended for their subsistence upon clams, ground-nuts, and acorns. Wheat was sold for fourteen shillings (\$3.11) a bushel; and Indian corn, brought from Virginia, for eleven shillings (\$2.44). The price of cattle, for several years, continued very high. A good cow was valued at twenty-five pounds, (\$111.11,) and a yoke of oxen at forty pounds (\$177.77).

On the third of February, the Court laid a tax of sixty pounds, to make a palisade or defence about Newtown, now Cambridge. The proportion of Saugus and Marble Harbour, or Lynn and Marblehead, was six pounds.

On the eighteenth of February, a vessel owned by Mr. John Glover, of Dorchester, was wrecked on Nahant rocks; but the crew were all saved.

The Court, on the first of March, ordered, 'That if any person, within the Lymitts of this Patent, doe trade, trucke, or sell any money, either silver or golde, to any Indian, or any man that knowe of any that shall soe doe, and conceal the same, shall forfeit twenty for one. Further it is ordered, that whatever person hath received an Indian into their ffamilie as a servant, shall discharge themselves of them by the 1th of May next, and that noe person shall hereafter entertain any Indian for a servant without licence from the Court.'

Wonohaquaham and Montowampate, the sagamores of Wini-simet and Lynn, having been defrauded of twenty beaver skins by a man in England, named Watts, went to Governor Winthrop, on the twenty-sixth of March, to solicit his assistance in recovering their value. The governor entertained them kindly, and gave them a letter of introduction to Emanuel Downing, Esq., an eminent lawyer in London. Tradition says, that Montowampate went to England, where he was treated with much respect as an Indian king; but, disliking the English delicacies, he hastened back to Saugus, to the enjoyment of his clams and succatash.

At this time, there was no bridge across Saugus river, and people who travelled to Boston were compelled to pass through the woods in the northern part of the town, and ford the stream near the iron works, three miles north from the Railroad bridge. The following extract from a letter, written by Mr. John Endicott, of Salem, to Governor Winthrop, on the twelfth of April, illustrates this custom. Mr. Endicott had just been married. He says: 'Right Worshipful, I did hope to have been with you in person at the Court, and to that end I put to sea yesterday, and was driven back again, the wind being stiff against us; and there being no canoe or boat at Saugus, I must have been con-



strained to go to Mystic, and thence about to Charlestown; which at this time I durst not be so bold, my body being at present in an ill condition to take cold, and therefore I pray you to pardon me.'

A quarrel had arisen, a short time previous, between Mr. Endicott and Thomas Dexter, in which the Salem magistrate so far forgot his dignity as to strike Mr. Dexter, who complained to the Court at Boston. It was on this occasion that Mr. Endicott wrote the letter from which the preceding extract is made. He thus continues: 'I desired the rather to have been at Court, because I hear I am much complained of by Goodman Dexter for striking him; understanding since it is not lawful for a justice of peace to strike. But if you had seen the manner of his carriage, with such daring of me, with his arms akimbo, it would have provoked a very patient man. He hath given out, if I had a purse he would make me empty it, and if he cannot have justice here, he will do wonders in England; and if he cannot prevail there, he will try it out with me here at blows. If it were lawful for me to try it at blows, and he a fit man for me to deal with, you should not hear me complain.' The jury, to whom the case was referred, gave their verdict for Mr. Dexter, on the third of May, and gave damages ten pounds, (\$44.44.) Beside the evidence of the blow, Mr. Endicott manifests somewhat of an irascible disposition in his letter; and Mr. Dexter was not a man to stand for nice points of etiquette on occasions of irritability. Some years afterward, having been insulted by Samuel Hutchinson, he met him one day on the road, and jumping from his horse, he bestowed 'about twenty blows on his head and shoulders,' to the no small danger and deray of his senses, as well as sensibilities.

April 12. 'It is ordered, that every Captaine shall traine his companie on saterday in every weeke.'

May 18. 'It is ordered, that no person shall kill any wild swine, without a general agreement at some court.'

July 5. A tax of thirty pounds was laid for the purpose of opening a canal from Charles river to Cambridge. The requisition on Lynn was for one pound.

Masconomo, the sagamore of Agawam, or Ipswich, having committed some offence against the eastern Indians, the Court, on the fifth of July, passed an order, forbidding him to enter any Englishman's house within one year, under a penalty of ten beaver skins. The Taratines, also, undertook to avenge their own wrong. On the eighth of August, about one hundred of them landed from their canoes, at Ipswich, in the night, and killed seven of Masconomo's men, wounding several more, some of whom afterwards died. They also wounded Wonohaquaham and Montowampate, who were on a visit to that place; and

carried away Wenuchus, the wife of Montowampate, a captive. She was detained by them about two months, and was restored on the intercession of Mr. Abraham Shurd, of Pemaquid, who traded with the Indians. She returned on the seventeenth of September. For her release, the Taratines demanded a quantity of wampum and beaver skins.

The people of Lynn were soon after alarmed by a report, that the Taratines intended an attack on them, and appointed men each night to keep a watch. Once, about midnight, Ensign Richard Walker, who was on the guard, heard the bushes break near him, and felt an arrow pass through his coat and 'buff waistcoat.' As the night was dark, he could see no one, but he discharged his gun, which, being heavily loaded, split in pieces. He then called the guard, and returned to the place, when he had another arrow shot through his clothes. Deeming it imprudent to proceed in the dark against a concealed enemy, he desisted from further search until morning. The people then assembled, and discharged their cannon into the woods; after which, the Indians gave them no further molestation.

On the twenty-fifth of October, Governor Winthrop, with several of his officers, visited Lynn on foot, passing through the ford of Saugus river. They spent the night in Lynn, and the next day went to Salem. They returned on the twenty-eighth. In passing through Lynn, Governor Winthrop puts down in his journal, 'A plentiful crop.'

Thus have we seen the town, which three years before was a wilderness of Indians, now occupied by cottages of white men, living in harmony with the natives; clearing the forest, and cultivating the soil, and, by the blessing of Providence, reaping a rich reward for their labors. The Indians had received them with kindness, and given them liberty to settle where they pleased; but some years after, they made an agreement with the natives for the land. The deed has shared the fate of the lost records; but one of the town treasurers told me that he had the deed in his possession about the year 1800, and that the compensation was sixteen pounds ten shillings—about seventy-three dollars. The people of Salem paid twenty pounds for the deed of their town.

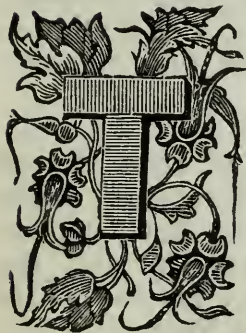


## CHAPTER IV.

Character and Religion of the first settlers — Church established at Lynn — Life of Rev. Stephen Bachiler — Poquannum, Sagamore of Nahant, murdered — Thomas Dexter punished — Mill built — Wood's description of Lynn — Montowampate dies — Hon. John Humfrey arrives — Great Storm — New Inhabitants — Rev. Samuel Whiting settled — Church Covenant—1632 to 1636.

To what famed college we our vicar owe,  
To what fair country, let historians show;  
But let applause be dealt in all we may,  
Our priest was cheerful, and in season gay.

CRABBE.



THE great body of the first settlers of Massachusetts were members of the church of England. After they had gone aboard the ships, they addressed a letter 'To the rest of their brethren in and of the Church of England,' in which they say: 'We desire you would be pleased to take notice of the principals and body of our company, as those who esteem it our honor to call the Church of England, from whence we rise, our dear Mother; and cannot depart from our native country where she specially resideth, without much sadness of heart, and many tears in our eyes; ever acknowledging that such hope and part as we have obtained in the common salvation, we have received it from her bosom.' Prince, who stands in the first rank of our historians, says: 'They had been chiefly born and brought up in the national church, and had, until their separation, lived in communion with her; their ministers had been ordained by her bishops, and had officiated in her parish churches, and had made no secession from her until they left their native land.' The author of the Planter's Plea, printed in 1630, says: 'It may be with good assurance maintained, that at least three parts out of four, of the men there planted, are able to justify themselves to have lived in a constant course of conformity unto our church government.' Morton, in his Memorial says, when the ministers were accused, 'They answered for themselves; they were neither separatists nor anabaptists; they did not separate from the Church of England, nor from the ordinances of God there;

and the generality of the people did well approve of the ministers answer.' Backus, who had no partiality for the church, but who could nevertheless speak the truth, says: 'The governor and company of the Massachusetts colony held communion with the national church, and reflected on their brethren who separated from her.' Mr. Hubbard, who was well acquainted with many of them, says: 'They always walked in a distinct path from the rigid separatists, nor did they ever disown the Church of England to be a true church.' The puritans of Plymouth colony, were the 'rigid separatists,' and they continued a separate government until the year 1692. Some historians have confounded these facts, and have thus misled their readers.

Among the early settlers of Lynn were some persons of high reputation, and most of them appear to have been men of good character, and of comfortable property. There is no evidence that any of them had abandoned the church, or been persecuted for their opinions, with the exception of the Rev. Stephen Bachiler, and the few persons in his connexion. Governor Winthrop, who came over with them, begins his journal on 'Easter Monday,' which Mr. Savage says was 'duly honored;' and it is not until nearly five years after, that we catch a glimpse of his puritanism, when he begins to date on the 'eleventh month.'

**1632.** For the first three years, the people of Lynn had no minister, but some of them attended church at Salem, and others had meetings for prayer and exhortation. The Rev. Stephen Bachiler, with his family, arrived at Boston on Thursday, the fifth of June, after a tedious passage of eighty-eight days. He came in the ship William and Francis, Captian Thomas, which sailed from London on the ninth of March. He immediately came to Lynn, where his daughter Theodate, wife of Christopher Hussey resided. He was seventy-one years of age. In his company were six persons who had belonged to a church with him in England; and of these he constituted a church at Lynn, to which he admitted such as desired to become members, and commenced the exercise of his public ministrations on Sunday, the eighth of June, without installation. He baptized four children, born before his arrival; two of whom, Thomas Newhall and Stephen Hussey, were born the same week. Thomas, being the first white child born in Lynn, was first presented; but Mr. Bachiler put him aside, saying, 'I will baptise my own child first' — meaning his daughter's child.

The church at Lynn was the fifth in Massachusetts. The first was gathered at Salem, August 6, 1629; the second at Dorchester in June, 1630; the third at Charlestown, July 30, 1630, and removed to Boston; the fourth at Watertown on the



same day ; and the fifth at Lynn, June 8, 1632. The first meeting-house was a small plain building, without bell or cupola, and stood on the northeastern corner of Shepard and Summer streets. It was placed in a small hollow, that it might be better sheltered from the winds, and was partly sunk into the earth, being entered by descending several steps.

In the General Court on the ninth of May, ' A proposition was made by the people that every company of trained men might choose their own captain and officers ; but the governor, giving them reasons to the contrary, they were satisfied without it.'

On the fourteenth of June, as Captain Richard Wright was returning from the eastward, in a vessel, with about eight hundred dollars' worth of goods on board, one of the crew, when off Portsmouth, proceeded to light his pipe ; but was requested to desist, as there was a barrel of powder on board. He replied that ' he should take one pipe if the devil carried him away.' The boat and the men, says Winthrop, were presently blown to pieces ; but the rest of the crew, though some of them were drunk and asleep, escaped.

Governor Winthrop, in his journal, August fourteenth, remarks : ' This week they had, in barley and oats, at Sagas, about twenty acres good corn, and sown with the plough.'

On the fourth of September, Richard Hopkins, of Watertown, was arraigned for selling a gun and pistol, with powder and shot, to Montowampate, the Lynn sagamore. The sentence of the Court was that he should ' be severely whippt, and branded with a hot iron on one of his cheekes.' One of the Saugus Indians gave the information, on promise of concealment, for his discovery would have exposed him to the resentment of his tribe.

Captain Nathaniel Turner was chosen, by the General Court, ' constable of Saugus for this year, and till a new be chosen.'

In consequence of ' a suspicion that the Indians were conspiring the destruction of the whites, the neighboring sagamores were called before the governor on the fourteenth of September. The readiness with which they appeared evinced their friendly disposition.

Mr. Bachiler had been in the performance of his pastoral duties about four months, when a complaint was made of some irregularities in his conduct. He was arraigned before the Court at Boston, on the third of October, when the following order was passed : ' Mr. Bachiler is required to forbear exercising his gifts as a pastor or teacher publicly in our Pattent, unlesse it be to those he brought with him, for his contempt of authority, and until some scandles be removed.' This was the commencement of a series of difficulties which agitated the unhappy church for several years.

October 3. 'It is ordered that Saugus plantation shall have liberty to build a ware upon Saugus Ryver; also they have promised to make and continually to keepe a goode foote bridge, upon the most convenient place there.' This wear was chiefly built by Thomas Dexter, for the purpose of taking bass and alewives, of which many were dried and smoaked for shipping. It crossed the river near the iron-works. The bridge was only a rude structure of timber and rails.

'It is further ordered, that no person shall take any tobacco publicly, under pain of punishment; also that every one shall pay one penny for every time he is convicted of taking tobacco in any place.'

On the second of November, a vessel commanded by Captain Pierce, and loaded with fish, of which Mr. John Humfrey was part owner, was wrecked off Cape Charles, and twelve men drowned.

November 7. 'It is ordered that the Captaines shall train their companies but once a monethe.'

'It is referred to Mr. Turner, Peter Palfrey, and Roger Conant, to sell out a proportion of land in Saugus for John Humfrey, Esqr.' This land was laid out at Swampscot. Mr. Turner was also one of a committee to settle a difference respecting the boundary line between Cambridge and Charlestown.

In the month of December, a servant girl, in the family of the Rev. Samuel Skelton of Salem, coming to see her friends at Lynn, lost her way, and wandered seven days. Mr. Winthrop says, 'All that time she was in the woods, having no kind of food, the snow being very deep, and as cold as at any time that winter. She was so frozen into the snow some mornings, as she was one hour before she cold get up.' Mr. Wood says, 'The snow being on the ground at first, she might have trackt her own footsteps back again; but wanting that understanding, she wandred, till God by his speciall Providence brought her back to the place she went from, where she lives to this day.'

**1633.** In the month of January, this year, Poquanum, the sagamore of Nahant was unfortunately killed. Several vessels having been to the eastward in search of some pirates, stopped on their return at Richmond's Isle, near Portland, where they found 'Black William,' whom they hanged in revenge for the murder of Walter Bagnall, who had been killed by the Indians, on the third of October, 1631. Mr. Winthrop says that Bagnall 'was a wicked fellow, and had much wronged the Indians.' It is not certain that Poquanum had any concern in his death; on the contrary, Governor Winthrop tells that he was killed by 'Squidraysett and his Indians.' Thus terminated the existence of a chief who had welcomed the white men, and bestowed benefits on them.



In the course of a few months, Mr. Bachiler had so far succeeded in regaining the esteem of the people, that the Court, on the fourth of March, removed their injunction that he should not preach in the colony, and left him at liberty to resume the performance of his public services.

At the same Court, Mr. Thomas Dexter was ordered to 'be set in the bilbowes, disfranchised, and fined X£. for speaking reproachful and seditious words against the government here established.' The bilbows were a kind of stocks, like those in which the hands and feet of poor Hudibras were confined.

————— 'The Knight  
And brave squire from their steeds alight,  
At the outer wall, near which there stands  
A Bastile, made to imprison hands,  
By strange enchantment made to fetter  
The lesser parts, and free the greater.

One of these elegant and commodious appendages of the law, was placed near the meeting-house; where it stood the terror and punishment of all such evil doers as spoke against government, chewed tobacco, or went to sleep in a sermon two hours long. However censurable Mr. Dexter may have been, his punishment was certainly disproportioned to his fault. To be deprived of the privileges of a freeman, to be exposed to the ignominy of the stocks, and to be amerced in a fine of more than forty dollars, show that the magistrates were greatly incensed by his remarks. If every man were to be set in the bilbows, who speaks against government in these days, there would scarcely be trees enough in Lynn woods to make stocks of. The magistrates of those days had not acquired the lesson, which their successors have long since learned, that censure is the tax which public men must pay for their adventitious greatness.

On the fourth of March, Mr. Nathaniel Turner was chosen by the General Court, 'Captaine of the military company att Saugus.'

Captain Turner gave ten pounds 'towards the sea fort,' built for the defence of Boston harbor. Captain Richard Wright gave '400 feet 4 inch planke,' for the same purpose.

Mr. Edward Howe was fined twenty shillings, 'for selling stronge waters, contrary to order of Court.'

At a town meeting on the twelfth of July, the inhabitants made a grant to Mr. Edward Tomlins, of a privilege to build a corn-mill, at the mouth of the stream which flows from the Flax pond, where Chase's mill now stands. This was the second mill in the colony, the first having been built at Dorchester the same year. At this time, the pond next above the Flax pond was partly a meadow; and some years after a dam was built and the pond raised by Edward Tomlins, from whom it was

called Tomlin's pond. In reference to this mill, we find the following testimonies, given June 3, 1678, in the Essex Registry of Deeds.

'I, George Keaser, Aged about 60 yeare, doe testifie, that being at a Towne meetinge in Linne meeting house many yeares agoe, mr. Edward Tomlins made complaint then to the Towne of Linne, that there was not water enough in the great pond next to the Towne of Linne to serve the mill to grind their grist in the sumer time, and he desired leave of the Towne to make a dam in the upper pond to keep a head of water against the height of sumer time, that soe he might have a suply of water to Grind their Grist in the drought of sumer. And the Towne of linne granted him his request, that he would make a dam there, where the old trees lay for a bridge for all people to goe over, instead of a bridg.'

'This I, Clement Coldam, aged about 55 years, doe testifie, that the grant of the old mill was in July ye 12, 1633, to Edward Tomlins, which was the second mill in this colony; and after the Towne saw that the mill could not supply the Towne, they gave leave to build an overshoot mill upon the same water; with a sluice called by the name of the old sluice, being made by Mr. Howell, the second owner of the mill; and then Mr. Howell did sell the same mill to John Elderkin; and John Elderkin did sell it to mr. Bennet, and mr. Bennet did sell it to Goodman Wheeler, and Goodman Wheeler sould it to John Ballard, and John Ballard sold it to Henry Rhodes. And this I testifie that the water to supply the mill with, was granted to the mill, before any Meddow in the Towne was granted to any man, wee mowing all comon then. And this I testifie, that I kept the key of the old sluice for mr. South, which is since about 27 or 28 yeares agoe.'

Edward Richards testified, that Mr. Tomlins 'was not to stop or hinder the alewives to go up to the great pond.'

The following description of ancient Saugus and Nahant is extracted from 'Nevv England's Prospect,' written this year by William Wood of Lynn, and which he says was undertaken, 'because there hath been many scandalous and false reports past upon the country, even from the sulphurous breath of every base ballad monger.'

'The next plantation is Saugus, sixe miles northeast from Winnesimet. This Towne is pleasant for situation, seated in the bottom of a Bay, which is made on one side with the surrounding shore, and on the other with a long, sandy Beach. This sandy beach is two miles long at the end, whereon is a necke of land called Nahant. It is sixe miles in circumference, well wooded with Oakes, Pines, and Cedars. It is beside, well watered, having beside the fresh Springs, a great Pond in the



middle, before which is a spacious Marsh. In this necke is store of good ground, fit for the Plow; but for the present it is only used for to put young Cattle in, and weather Goates, and Swine, to secure them from the Woolues; a few posts and rayles, from the low water markes to the shore, keepe out the Woolves, and keepe in the Cattle. One Blacke William, an Indian Duke, out of his generosity, gave this place in generall to this plantation of Saugus, so that no other can appropriate it to himselfe.

‘Vpon the South side of the Sandy Beach, the Sea beateth, which is a true prognostication to presage stormes and foule weather, and the breaking up of the Frost. For when a storme hath beene, or is likely to be, it will roare like Thunder, being heard sixe miles; and after stormes casts up great stores of great Clammes, which the Indians, taking out of their shels, carry home in baskets. On the North side of this Bay is two great Marshes, which are made two by a pleasant River, which runnes between them. Northward up this river goes great store of Alewives, of which they make good Red Herrings; insomuch that they have been at charges to make them a wayre, and a Herring house to dry these Herrings in; the last year were dried some 4 or 5 Last\* for an experiment, which proved very good; this is like to prove a great inrichment to the land, being a staple commodity in other Countries, for there be such innumerable companies in every river, that I have seen ten thousand taken in two houres, by two men, without any weire at all, saving a few stones to stop their passage up the river. There likewise come store of Basse, which the English and Indians catch with hooke and line, some fifty or three score at a tide. At the mouth of this river runnes up a great Creeke into that great Marsh, which is called Rumny Marsh, which is 4 miles long, and 2 miles broad, halfe of it being Marsh ground, and halfe upland grasse, without tree or bush; this Marsh is crossed with divers creekes, wherein lye great store of Geese and Duckes. There be convenient Ponds, for the planting of Duck coyes. Here is likewise belonging to this place, divers fresh Meddowes, which afford good grasse; and foure spacious Ponds, like little Lakes, wherein is good store of fresh Fish, within a mile of the Towne; out of which runnes a curious fresh Brooke, that is seldom frozen, by reason of the warmnesse of the water; upon this stream is built a water Milne, and up this river come Smelts and frost fish, much bigger than a Gudgeon. For wood there is no want, there being store of good Oakes, Wallnut, Cedar, Aspe, Elme. The ground is very good, in many places without trees, and fit for the plough. In this place is more English tillage than in all New England and Virginia besides;

which proved as well as could be expected ; the corn being very good, especially the Barley, Rye and Oates.

‘ The land affordeth to the inhabitants as many varieties as any place else, and the sea more ; the Basse continuing from the middle of April to Michaelmas,\* which ‘stayes not half that time in the Bay ;† besides, here is a great deal of Rock cod and Macrill, insomuch that shoales of Basse have driven up shoales of Macrill, from one end of the sandy Beach to the other ; which the inhabitants have gathered up in wheelbarrows. The Bay which lyeth before the Towne, at a lowe spring tyde will be all flatts for two miles together ; upon which is great store of Muscle banckes, and Clam banckes, and Lobsters amongst the rockes and grassie holes. These flatts make it unnavigable for shippes ; yet at high water, great Boates, Loiters,‡ and Pinnaces of 20 and 30 tun, may saile up to the plantation ; but they neede have a skilful Pilote, because of many dangerous rockes and foaming breakers, that lye at the mouth of that Bay. The very aspect of the place is fortification enough to keepe of an unknowne enemy ; yet it may be fortified at little charge, being but few landing places thereabout, and those obscure.’

Of the health of Lynn, Mr. Wood remarks : ‘ Out of that Towne, from whence I came, in three years and a half, there died but three ; to make good which losses, I have seene foure children Baptized at one time.’ Prefixed to his book, is the following address, written by some one in England, who signs himself s. w.

‘ Thanks to thy travel and thyself, who hast  
Much knowledge in so small room comptly placed,  
And thine experience thus a mound dost make,  
From whence we may New England’s prospect take,  
Though many thousands distant ; therefore thou  
Thyself shall sit upon mount praise her brow.  
For if the man who shall the short cut find  
Unto the Indies, shall for that be shrined,  
Sure thou deservest then no small praise who  
So short cut to New England here dost shew ;  
And if than this small thanks thou get’st no more  
Of thanks, I then will say the world’s grown poor.’

The ‘curious fresh broocke’ which Mr. Wood notices, is Strawberry Brook ; which is kept warm by the numerous springs beneath the pond in which it originates, and by its constant flowing for the supply of several mills. Mr. Robert Mansfield, who lived near its source, told me that he had never seen it frozen for more than seventy years.

A tax made by the General Court, on the first of October, will show the relative wealth of the several towns. The ap-

---

\* September 29.

† Boston Harbor.

‡ Lighters.



portionment was, to Dorchester, 80 pounds; to Boston, Charlestown, Cambridge, Watertown, and Roxbury, each, 48 pounds; Lynn, 36; Salem, 28.' At several assessments, Lynn was in advance of Salem.

Such great quantities of corn having been used for fattening swine, as to occasion a scarcity, the Court ordered, on the fifth of November, 'That no man shall give his swine any corn, but such as, being viewed by two or three neighbors, shall be judged unfit for man's meat; and every plantation may agree how many swine every person may keep.'

The Court ordered, that every man, in each plantation, excepting magistrates and ministers, should pay for three day's work, at one shilling and sixpence each, for completing the Fort in Boston harbor.

The ministers of Lynn and the western towns were in the practice of meeting at each other's houses, once in two weeks, to discuss important questions. The ministers of Salem were averse to the practice, fearing it might eventuate in the establishment of a presbytery.

On the fourth of December, corresponding with the fifteenth of new style, the snow was 'knee deep,' and the rivers frozen.

The year 1633 was rendered memorable by the death of the three Indian sagamores. In January, Pequannum was murdered; and in December, Wonohaquaham and Montowampate died. Governor Winthrop, in his journal, says: 'December 5. John Sagamore died of the small pox, and almost all his people; above thirty buried by Mr. Maverick of Winesemett in one day. The towns in the bay took away many of the children; but most of them died soon after.

'James Sagamore of Sagus died also, and most of his folks. John Sagamore desired to be brought among the English; so he was; and promised, if he recovered, to live with the English and serve their God. He left one son, which he disposed to Mr. Wilson, the pastor of Boston, to be brought up by him. He gave to the governor a good quantity of wampompeague, and to divers others of the English he gave gifts; and took order for the payment of his own debts and his men's. He died in a persuasion that he should go to the Englishmen's God. Divers of them, in their sickness, confessed that the Englishmen's God was a good God, and that if they recovered they would serve him. It wrought much with them, that when their own people forsook them, yet the English came daily and ministered to them; and yet few, only two families, took any infection by it. Amongst others Mr. Maverick, of Winesemett is worthy of a perpetual remembrance. Himself, his wife and servants, went daily to them, ministered to their necessities, and buried their dead, and took home many of their children. So did other of the neighbors.'

After the death of his brothers, Wenepoykin became sagamore of the remaining Indians in this region.

**1634.** The inconvenience of having the Legislature composed of the whole number of freemen, and the danger of leaving the plantations exposed to the attacks of the Indians, induced the people to form a House of Representatives, who first assembled on the fourteenth of May. Eight towns were represented, each of which sent three representatives — Boston, Charlestown, Roxbury, Dorchester, Cambridge, Watertown, Lynn and Salem. The representatives from Lynn were Captain Nathaniel Turner, Edward Tomlins, and Thomas Willis. The General Court this year consisted of the Governor, Deputy Governor, six assistants and twenty-four representatives. This number was not much increased for many years; each town sending fewer, rather than more representatives.

Hon. John Humfrey, with his wife, the Lady Susan, a daughter of the Earl of Lincoln, arrived in July. He brought with him a valuable present from Mr. Richard Andrews, an alderman of London, consisting of sixteen heifers, at this time valued at more than eighty dollars each. One of them was designed for each of the eight ministers, and the remainder were for the poor. He went to reside on his farm at Swampscot, which had been laid out by order of the Court. It consisted of five hundred acres, 'between Forest river and the cliff.' The bounds extended 'a mile from the seaside,' and ran 'to a great white oak by the rock,' including 'a spring south of the oak.' The spring is on Mr. Stetson's farm, and the 'old oak' is still standing about a furlong north, where it is hoped it will long be suffered to remain, a living memorial of other times.

O spare the tree, whose dewy tears  
Have fallen for a thousand years!  
Beneath whose shade, in days of old,  
The careful shepherd watched his fold;  
On whose green top the eagle sate,  
To watch the fish hawk's watery weight;  
And oft in moonlight by whose side,  
The Indian wooed his dusky bride!  
It speaks to man of early time,  
Before the earth was stained with crime  
Ere cannon waked our peaceful plains,  
When silence ruled her vast domains.  
O, as you love the bold and free,  
Spare, woodman, spare the old oak tree!

Since the publication of these lines in the first edition, Mr. Morris has written his admirable song, 'Woodman, spare that tree!' But, alas! the old oak, the last of the ancient forest of Lynn, has been cut down. Some people have no sentiment.



On the third of September, the Court ordered, 'That Mr. Edward Tomlins, or any other put in his place, by the Commissioners of War, with the help of an assistant, shall have power to presse men and carts, for ordinary wages, to helpe towards makeing of such carriages and wheelles as are wanting for the ordinances.'

On training day, Captain Turner, by the direction of Colonel Humfrey, went with his company to Nahant, to hunt the wolves by which it was infested. This was very pleasant amusement for training day.

**1635.** Though an agreement had been made by Thomas Dexter with the Indian chief, for the proprietorship of Nahant, yet the town evidently regarded it as their property; as will appear by the following extracts from the Town Records, preserved in the files of the General Court:

January 11. 'It is also voted by the freemen of the towne, that these men underwritten shall have liberty to plant and build at Nahant, and shall possess each man land for the said purpose, and proceeding in the trade of fishing. Mr. Humfreys, Daniel How, Mr. Ballard, Joseph Redknapp, Timothy Tomlins, Richard Walker, Thomas Talmage, Henry Feakes, Francis Dent.'

January 18. 'It is ordered by the freemen of the towne, that all such persons as are assigned any land at Nahant, to further the trade of making fish, That if they do not proceed accordingly to forward the said trade, but either doe grow remiss, or else doe give it quite over, that then all such lotts shall be forfeited again to the towne, to dispose of as shall be thought fitte.'

The dissensions which had commenced in Mr. Bachiler's church at an early period, began again to assume a formidable appearance. Some of the members, disliking the conduct of the pastor, and 'withal making a question whether they were a church or not,' withdrew from the communion. Mr. Bachiler requested them to present their grievances in writing, but as they refused to do that, he gave information that he should proceed to excommunicate them. In consequence of this, a council of ministers was held on the fifteenth of March. After a deliberation of three days, they decided, that although the church had not been properly instituted, yet the mutual exercise of their religious duties had supplied the defect.

The difficulties in the self-constituted church, however, did not cease with the decision of the council, but continued to increase, until Mr. Bachiler, perceiving no prospect of their termination, requested a dismissal for himself and his first members, which was granted.

The celebrated Hugh Peters, who had just arrived in America,

was next employed to preach, and the people requested him to become their minister; but he preferred to exercise the duties of that office at Salem. He was a very enterprising man, but seems to have been much better adapted for a politician than a minister. He was a great favorite of Johnson, the Woburn poet, who thus alludes to his preaching, and to the difficulties at Lynn:

‘ With courage Peters, a soldier stout,  
In wilderness for Christ begins to war;  
Much work he finds ’mongst people yet hold out,  
With fluent tongue he stops phantastic jar.’

He returned to England in 1641, and unhappily became involved in the ambitious designs of Cromwell,—preached the funeral sermon over the ‘grey discrowned head’ of the unfortunate Charles the First—and was executed for treason on the sixteenth of October, 1660. He left ‘A Father’s Legacy to an Only Child;’ written in the Tower of London, and addressed, ‘For Elizabeth Peters, my dear Child.’ He says, ‘I was the son of considerable parents from Foy in Cornwall. I am heartily sorry I was ever popular, and known better to others than to myself. And if I go shortly where time shall be no more, where cock nor clock distinguish hours, sink not, but lay thy head in his bosom who can keep thee, for he sits upon the waves. Farewell.

‘ I wish thee neither poverty nor riches,  
But godliness, so gainful with content;  
No painful pomp, nor glory that bewitches,  
A blameless life is the best monument!’

It was the custom in those early days to have an hourglass in the pulpit, by which the minister timed his sermons. A painter of that day made a picture, in which he represented Mr. Peters turning an hour glass and saying, ‘I know you are good fellows; stay and take another glass!’

The standard borne at this time was a red cross in a white field. This emblem was not congenial to the feelings of Mr. Endicott, and he ordered it to be cut out from the banner at Salem. This occasioned much dissatisfaction among the people, and a committee from each town was appointed in May, to consider of the offence. They judged it to be ‘great, rash, and without discretion,’ and disqualified him, for one year, from bearing any public office.

May 6. ‘There is 500 acres of land, and a freshe Pond, with a little Island, conteyning about two acres, granted to John Humfrey Esqr., lying between north and west of Saugus; provided he take no part of the 500 acres within five miles of any Town now planted. Also, it is agreed that the inhabitants of Saugus and Salem, shall have liberty to build store howses upon the said Island, and to lay in such provisions as they shall judge



necessary for their use in tyme of neede.' The land thus laid out was around Humfrey's Pond, in Lynnfield, and was nearly one mile in extent.

On the sixteenth of August happened one of the most tremendous storms ever known in New England. It beat down the corn, overturned houses, and tore up by the roots 'many hundred thousands of trees.' The east wind blew with such violence, that the tide was turned before the ebb had half fallen, and the sea rose many feet, so that some Indians were drowned, and others climbed trees for safety. A vessel was wrecked on Thacher's Island, and twenty-one persons lost. Mr. Anthony Thacher and his wife, ancestors of Rev. Thomas Cushing Thacher, afterward minister of Lynn, were the only persons saved.

This year brass farthings were prohibited, and musket bullets were ordered to pass for farthings.

Many new inhabitants appear at Lynn about this time, whose names it will be well to preserve.

Abraham Belknap had two sons, Abraham and Jeremy; and from him descended Dr. Jeremy Belknap, the historian of New Hampshire.

Edmund Bridges came over in July, 1635, and died in 1686, aged 74 years. The name of his wife was Mary, and his sons John and Josiah. He was the second shoemaker at Lynn.

James Boutwell, farmer, freeman 1638, died 1651. His wife was Alice, and his children, Samuel, Sarah, and John.

Edward Burcham, freeman, 1638, clerk of the writs, 1645. In 1656 he returned to England.

George Burt came to Lynn in 1635, and died November 2, 1661. He was a farmer, and the value of his estate was £144.4.9. He had three sons; George, who went to Sandwich in 1637; Hugh, born 1591; and Edward, who removed to Charlestown.

Henry Collins was a starch maker, and lived in Essex street. He embarked in the Abigail of London, on the thirtieth of June, 1635. In 1639 he was a member of the Salem Court. He was born in 1606, and was buried February 20, 1687, at the age of 81 years. His wife Ann was born in 1605. His children were Henry, born 1630; John, born 1632; Margery, born 1633; and Joseph, born 1635, and his descendants remain.

John Cooper embarked in the Hopewell, of London, April 1, 1635. He was born at Oney, in Buckinghamshire, in 1594.

Timothy Cooper, farmer, died in March, 1659. His children were Mary, Hannah, John, Timothy, Dorcas, and Rebecca.

Jenkin Davis, joiner, freeman 1637, died 1661. His wife was Sarah, and he had a son John.

John Deacon was the first blacksmith at Lynn, and in 1638 had twenty acres of land allotted to him.

Edmund Freeman, born in 1590, came to Lynn in 1635. He removed to Sandwich in 1637, and was an assistant of Plymouth colony in 1640. His children were Elizabeth, Alice, Edmund, and John. Mr. Freeman presented the colony with twenty corslets, or pieces of plate armor.

Edmund Farrington embarked in the Hopewell, of London, April 1, 1635, with his wife and four children.\* He was a native of Oney, in Buckinghamshire; born in 1588. He was a farmer, and had 200 acres of land, part of which was on the western side of Federal street, where he lived, and part on the western side of Myrtle street, where the land is well known as 'Farrington's Field.' In 1655 he built a corn mill on Water Hill, where a pond was dug, and a water course opened for half a mile, called 'Farrington's Canal.' He died in 1670, aged 82 years. The name of his wife was Elizabeth; born in 1586. His children were Sara, born in 1621; Martha, born in 1623; John, born in 1624; and Elizabeth, born in 1627, and married John Fuller in 1646. He also had a son Matthew, to whom, on the 16th of June, he gave half his corn mill, 'except the tole of my son fuller's grists, which is well and duly to be ground tole free, during the life of my daughter Elizabeth.†

Christopher Foster embarked in the Abigail, of London, June 17, 1635. He was a farmer, was admitted a freeman in 1637, and lived in Nahant street. He was born in 1603. His wife Frances was born in 1610. His children were Rebecca, born 1630; Nathaniel, born 1633; and John, born 1634.

Joseph Floyd lived in Fayette street. In 1666, he sold his house and land to 'Henry Silsbee of Ipswich,' for thirty-eight pounds, and removed to Chelsea. His land is described as bounded 'west next the town common, and east next a little river.' The 'town common' then meant the public lands in Woodend; and the 'little river' was Stacey's brook.

George Fraile died December 9, 1663. He had a son George, who was accidentally killed in 1669, 'by a piece of timber, of about fifteen hundred weight, rolling over him.†

Dennis Geere came from Thesselworth to Lynn in 1635. He was born in 1605, and his wife Elizabeth was born in 1613. His children were Elizabeth and Sara. He died in 1635, and gave, by his will, £300 to the colony.

Nathaniel Handforth was a 'haberdasher,' from London, and lived on the north side of the common. He was buried September 13, 1687, aged 79 years.

Richard Johnson came over in 1630, and lived with Sir Rich-

\*Records in Westminster Hall, London.

†Salem Court files.



ard Saltonstall, at Watertown. He was admitted a freeman in 1637. He came to Lynn the same year, and settled as a farmer, on the eastern end of the common. He died in 1666, aged 54 years. His children were Daniel, Samuel, Elizabeth, and Abigail. His descendants remain.

Philip Kertland was the first shoemaker known at Lynn. His name is from the German Cortlandt, or Lack-land; and I think it was afterwards changed to Kirkland. He was from Sherrington, in Buckinghamshire, and in 1638 had ten acres of land allotted to him by the town. He had two sons, Philip, born in 1614, and Nathaniel, born in 1616, who embarked on board the Hopewell, of London, William Burdock, master, on the first of April, 1635. The two sons remained at Lynn five years, and in 1640 went to form the new settlement of Southampton on Long Island. Nathaniel returned to Lynn, married, and had three children; Nathaniel, Sarah, and Priscilla. He was buried December 27, 1686, aged 70 years.

The following is from the Essex Registry, October 14, 1659: 'Know all men by these presents, that I, Evan Thomas, of Boston, being about to marry the widow Alice Kertland of Lynn, do engage to and agree not to sell or alienate her now dwelling house and land.'

Francis Lightfoot, freeman 1636, died 1646. He came from London, and the name of his wife was Anne.

Thomas Loughton, farmer, freeman, 1638, lived in Franklin street. He was representative in 1646, and town clerk in 1672. He died August 8, 1697. His children were Thomas, Margaret, Samuel, Rebecca, and Elizabeth.

Richard Longley, farmer, had two sons; William, clerk of the writs in 1655, and Jonathan.

Captain Thomas Marshall came to Lynn in 1635. He embarked in the James, of London, on the seventeenth of July,\* and soon after his arrival was admitted a freeman. With many others, he returned to England, to join in the ambitious designs of Cromwell, by whom he was made a captain. He served in the army of the anarchy for several years, and returned to Lynn, laden with military glory. He was six times chosen representative. He purchased the tavern, on the west of Saugus river, which Mr. Joseph Armitage had opened. Here, with all the frankness and hospitality of a 'fine old English gentleman,' he kept open doors for the accommodation of the traveling public, for more than forty years. Mr. John Dunton, who passed through Lynn in 1686, thus mentions him in his journal.

---

\*Hon. James Savage. The public are greatly indebted to this gentleman for his intelligent annotations of Gov. Winthrop's Journal, and for his valuable researches in the manuscript records of England.

'About two of the clock I reached Capt. Marshall's house, which is half way between Boston and Salem; here I staid to refresh nature with a pint of sack and a good fowl. Capt. Marshall is a hearty old gentleman, formerly one of Oliver's soldiers, upon which he very much values himself. He had all the history of the civil wars at his fingers' end, and if we may believe him, Oliver did hardly any thing that was considerable without his assistance; and if I'd have staid as long as he'd have talked, he'd have spoiled my ramble to Salem.' He died December 23, 1689. His wife, Rebecca, died in August, 1693. He had two sons; John, born January 14, 1659; and Thomas, who removed to Reading.

In the Essex Registry of Deeds is the following testimony, which is interesting, as coming from the venerable old hero of Cromwell's war:

'Captain Thomas Marshall, aged about 67 yeares, doe testifie, that about 38 yeares since, the ould Water mill at Linn, which was an under shott mill, was by Mr. Howell committed to him, or before the said time, and about 38 yeares since, the building of an over shott mill was moved to the towne of Linn, and for incuragement to go on with the said worke, they then of the Towne of Linn Granted their Priviledges of water and water Courses to the said mill, and that this said water mill is now in the possession of Henry Roades; as witness my hand, Thomas Marshall; May 12th, 1683.

Thomas Parker embarked in the Christopher of London, March 11, 1635. He was born 1614.

John Pierson, farmer, lived in Nahant street, and removed to Reading. The name of his wife was Madeline.

John Pool, farmer, had 200 acres of land. His descendants remain.

Nicholas Potter was a mason, and had sixty acres of land.

Oliver Purchis, freeman 1636, representative 1660, assistant 1685, town clerk 1686; removed to Concord 1691, and died November 20, 1701, aged 88 years.

Richard Sadler, farmer, freeman 1638, came from Worcester, in England. He lived near the great rock in Holyoke street. He was a member of the Salem Court in 1639, and clerk of the writs in 1640. He had a son Richard, born in 1610, who returned to England in 1647, and was ordained May 16, 1648.

Thomas Townsend was a farmer, and lived near the iron works. He died December 22, 1677. His sons were John, Thomas, Henry, and Richard. Some of his descendants remain, others were among the first settlers of the towns on Long Island.

**1636.** Mr. Bachiler had been readily dismissed from his pastoral charge, in the expectation that he would desist from its exercise, or remove from the town; instead of which, he re-



newed his covenant with the persons who came with him from England, intending to continue his ministrations. The people opposed this design, as its tendency would be to frustrate their intention of settling another minister; they therefore complained to the magistrates, who forbade his proceeding. Finding that he disregarded their injunctions, and refused to appear before them, they sent the marshal to compel him. He was brought before the Court of Assistants, at Boston, in January, and was discharged on engaging to leave the town within three months.

Whoever has attentively read the lives of the early ministers of New England, as written by the Rev. Cotton Mather, must have noticed that they are all represented to have been men of uncommon learning, piety, and worth. This may be imputed partly to the embellishments of his pen, and partly to the fact, that they were born and educated in the bosom of the church, and in the best universities of Europe. We are greatly indebted to Mr. Mather for his account of those ministers; but we should have been far more grateful to him, if he had been more particular with regard to dates and facts respecting the subjects of his biography, instead of devoting so much time and space to the worthies of Greece and Rome; for we could easily have presumed his acquaintance with ancient history and the classics, without so ostentatious a display of it. In his life of Mr. Cobbett, he has given us but one date with certainty — the rest have been supplied by my laborious research. Mr. Bachiler he did not notice, and the following sketch of his life is the first which has ever been offered to the public.

The Rev. Stephen Bachiler was born in England in the year 1651, and received orders in the established church. In the early part of his life he enjoyed a good reputation; but being dissatisfied with some of the ceremonies of the church, and refusing to continue his conformity, he was deprived of his permission to perform her services. The church has been much censured for her severity, and all uncharitableness and persecution are to be deprecated; but in simply ejecting her ministers for non-conformity, after they have approved her mode of worship, and in the most solemn manner possible engaged themselves in her service, the church is no more censurable than all other communities, with whom the same practice is common. On leaving England, Mr. Bachiler went with his family to Holland, where he resided several years. He then returned to London, from which place he sailed, on the ninth of March, 1632, for New England. He arrived at Lynn on the sixth of June, having in his company six persons, his relatives and friends, who had belonged to his church in Holland. With them, and the few who united with them, he constituted a little church at Lynn, without any of the ceremonies usual on such occasions. He continued his ministrations here for about three years, with repeated inter-

ruptions, but he never had the support or the affections of the great body of the people. He was admitted a freeman on the sixth of May, 1635, and removed from Lynn in February, 1636. He went first to Ipswich, where he received a grant of fifty acres of land, and had the prospect of a settlement: but some difficulty having arisen, he left the place. In the very cold winter of 1637, he went on foot, with some of his friends, to Yarmouth, a distance of about one hundred miles. There he intended to plant a town, and establish a church; but finding the difficulties great, and 'his company being all poor men,' he relinquished the design. He then went to Newbury, where, on the sixth of July, 1638, the town made him a grant of land. On the sixth of September, the General Court granted him permission to settle a town at Hampton. In 1639, the inhabitants of Ipswich voted to give him sixty acres of upland, and twenty acres of meadow, if he would reside with them three years; but he did not accept their invitation. On the fifth of July, he and Christopher Hussey sold their houses and lands in Newbury, for 'six score pounds,' and removed to Hampton. There a town was planted, and a church gathered, of which Mr. Bachiler became the minister. The town granted him three hundred acres of land, and he presented them with a bell for the meeting house, in 1640. Here he was treated with respect, and in 1641, he was appointed umpire in an important case of real estate between George Cleves and John Winter. Dissensions however soon commenced, and the people were divided between him and his colleague, Rev. Timothy Dalton. He was also accused of irregular conduct, which is thus related by Gov. Winthrop.

'Mr. Bachiler, the pastor of the church at Hampton, who had suffered much at the hands of the bishops in England, being about eighty years of age, and having a lusty, comely woman to his wife, did solicit the chastity of his neighbor's wife, who acquainted her husband therewith; whereupon he was dealt with, but denied it, as he had told the woman he would do, and complained to the magistrates against the woman and her husband for slandering him. The church likewise dealing with him, he stiffly denied it; but soon after, when the Lord's supper was to be administered, he did voluntarily confess the attempt.'

For this impropriety, he was excommunicated by the church. Soon after, his house took fire, and was consumed with nearly all his property. In 1643, he was restored to the communion, but not to the office of minister. In 1644, the people of Exeter invited him to settle with them; but the Court laid their injunction. In 1647, he was at Portsmouth, where he resided three years. In 1650, being then eighty-nine years of age, and his second wife, Helena, being dead, he married his third wife, Mary; and in May was fined ten pounds, for not publishing his intention of marriage, according to law; half of which fine was



remitted in October. In the same year, the Court passed the following order, in consequence of their matrimonial disagreement:

‘It is ordered by this Court, that Mr. Batchelor and his wife shall lyve together as man and wife, as in this Court they have publicquely professed to doe; and if either desert one another, then hereby the Court doth order that the marshal shall apprehend both the said Mr. Batchelor and Mary his wife, and bring them forthwith to Boston, there to be kept till the next Quarter Court of Assistants, that farther consideration thereof may be had, both of them moving for a divorce; and this order shall be sufficient order soe to doe; provided notwithstanding, that if they put in £50, each of them, for their appearance, with such sureties as the commissioners or any one of them for the county shall think good to accept of, that then they shall be under their baile, to appear at the next Court of Assistants; and in case Mary Batchelor shall live out of the jurisdiction, without mutual consent for a time, that then the clarke shall give notice to the magistrate att Boston of her absence, that farther order may be taken therein.’

Soon after this, in 1651, Mr Bachelor left the country and returned to England, where he married his fourth wife, being himself ninety years of age, and his third wife Mary being still living. In October, 1656, she petitioned the Court, in the following words, to free her from her husband:

‘To the Honored Governor, Deputy Governor, with the Magistrates and Deputies at the General Court at Boston. The humble petition of Mary Bachelor sheweth — Whereas your petitioner, having formerly lived with Mr. Stephen Bachelor, a minister of this Collany, as his lawfull wife, and not unknown to divers of you, as I conceive, and the said Mr. Bachelor, upon some pretended ends of his owne, hath transported himself untoould England, for many yeares since, and betaken himself to another wife, as your petitioner hath often been credibly informed, and there continueth, whereby your petitioner is left destitute, not only of a guide to her and her children, but also made incapable thereby of disposing herselfe in the way of marriage to any other, without a lawful permission; and having now two children upon her hands, that are chargeable unto her, in regard to a disease God hath been pleased to lay upon them both, which is not easily curable, and so weakening her estate in prosecuting the means of cure, that she is not able longer to subsist, without utter ruining her estate, or exposing herself to the common charity of others; which your petitioner is loth to put herself upon, if it may be lawfully avoided, as is well known to all, or most part of her neighbors. And were she free from her engagement to Mr. Bachelor, might probably soe dispose of herselfe, as that she might obtain a meet helpe to assist her to

procure such means for her livelyhood, and the recovery of her children's health, as might keep them from perishing; which your petitioner to her great grief is much afraid of, if not timely prevented. Your petitioner's humble request therefore is, that this Honored Court would be pleased seriously to consider her condition, for matter of her relief in her freedom from the said Mr. Bachelor, and that she may be at liberty to dispose of herselfe in respect of any engagement to him, as in your wisdomes shall seem most expedient; and your petitioner shall humbly pray.

MARY BACHELER.'

No record appears that the Court took any order on this petition; nor are we informed whether the lady succeeded to 'dispose of herselfe,' in the manner which she seems to have had so much at heart. It is to be hoped, however, that her request was granted, for the woman had undoubtedly suffered enough for her lapses, as the reader will probably agree, when he shall have read the sentence, which may serve to clear up at least one of the mysteries in this strangest of all the lives of our early ministers. In the records of York, on the fifteenth of October, 1651, is the following entry: 'We do present George Rogers and Mary Batcheller, the wife of Mr. Stephen Batcheller, minister, for adultery. It is ordered that Mrs. Batcheller, for her adultery, shall receive 40 stripes save one, at the first town meeting held at Kittery, 6 weeks after her delivery, and be branded with the letter A.' In the horrible barbarity of this sentence we blush for the severity of the punishment, rather than for the crime. The husband and his erring wife have long since gone to their last account, and their errors and follies must be left to the adjustment of that tribunal which we hope is more merciful than the decisions of men. Mr. Bachiler had undoubtedly many virtues, or he would not have had many friends, and they would not have continued with him through all the changes of his varied life. Mr. Prince says that he was 'a man of fame in his day, a gentleman of learning and ingenuity, and wrote a fine and curious hand.' It was on his separation from the church at Lynn, with his subsequent misfortunes, that Mr. Edward Johnson wrote the following lines:

Through ocean large Christ brought thee for to feed  
His wandering flock, with 's word thou oft hast taught;  
Then teach thyself, with others thou hast need,  
Thy flowing fame unto low ebb is brought.

Faith and obedience Christ full near hath joined;  
Then trust in Christ and thou again mayst be  
Brought on thy race, though now far cast behind;  
Run to the end and crowned thou shalt be.'

Mr. Bachelor died at Hackney, near London, in 1660, in the one hundredth year of his age. He had four sons and three



daughters. Theodate married Christopher Hussey, and removed to Hampton. Deborah married John Wing of Lynn, and removed to Sandwich. The third daughter married a Sanborn; Francis and Stephen remained in London; Henry went to Reading; Nathaniel removed to Hampton, where in 1656, he married Deborah Smith, by whom he had nine children. After her death, he called on widow Mary Wyman of Woburn, and offered himself. She discouraged his hopes because he had so large a family. He replied, 'It was the first time he had ever known a woman to object to a man because he got children; he was going to Boston on business, and when he returned he would call for her answer.' He called as he had promised, she became his wife, and presented him with eight more children. Among the descendants from the Rev. Stephen Bachiler, may be mentioned the Hon. Daniel Webster.

The dissensions in the churches at Salem and Lynn, and the scarcity of provisions, occasioned a fast to be proclaimed, which was observed on the twenty-first of February.

On the third of March, the Court enacted, that each town should have power to regulate its own affairs; to set fines on offenders, not exceeding twenty shillings; and to choose a number of 'prudential men,' not exceeding seven, to order their municipal concerns. This was the legal origin of those officers since called 'Selectmen;' though some of the towns had similar officers before. They were at first chosen for only three months; and the town of Lynn continued to choose seven, until the year 1755, when the number was reduced to three. They also had a number of officers, called tythingmen, because each one was set over ten families, to observe their conduct, and to report any violation of the public order.

Mr. Timothy Tomlins was licensed as a Retailer, 'to draw wine for the town of Saugus.'

Mr. John Humfrey and Captain Nathaniel Turner were appointed by the Court to lay out the bounds of Ipswich.

Mr. Humfrey built a windmill, on the eastern mound of Sagamore Hill, which was thence called Windmill Hill.

A Court was established at Salem, to be held quarterly, for the benefit of that and the adjacent towns. The judges consisted of a magistrate, and several freemen, selected from each town, by the General Court. This year there were four, of whom Captain Nathaniel Turner was one. The first session commenced on the twenty-seventh of June. A fine of ten shillings was imposed on Thomas Stanley, the constable of Lynn, for not appearing; and a record, made in September, says, 'Now it is in corn, in William Woods' hands.'

The Rev. Samuel Whiting arrived from England in June; and was installed pastor of the church at Lynn, on Tuesday, the 8th

of November. The Council remained two days, and found much difficulty in organizing a church; which was composed of only six members, beside the minister. The following is a copy of the original church covenant, transcribed by me from the leaf of a pocket Bible, belonging to one of the ministers.

' The Covenant of the First Church of Christ in Lynn.

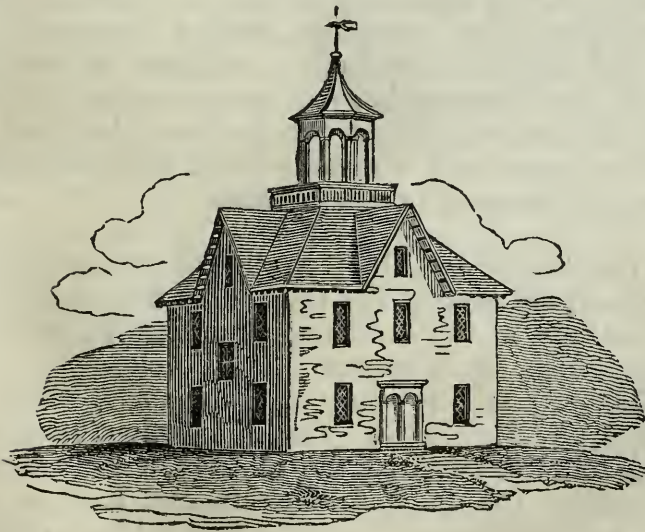
' We do give up ourselves to God, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, as to the only true and living God; avouching God the Father to be our father; embracing the Lord Jesus Christ as our only Saviour, in all his offices, prophetic, sacerdotal, and regal; depending on the blessed Spirit of Grace to be our Sanctifier, Teacher, Guide, and Comforter, and to make effectual application of the redemption purchased by Christ unto us; promising by the assistance, and through the sanctifying influences of that Blessed Spirit, to cleave unto this one God and Mediator, as his covenant people. We believe the revelation God hath made of himself, and our duty, in his word, to be true; and through grace strengthening, we promise to comply with the whole will of God, so far as he shall discover it to us. We promise, by the assistance of Divine Grace, to walk before God in our houses, in sincerity of heart; that we will uphold the worship of God therein; endeavoring to bring up all under our inspection, in the nurture and admonition of the Lord. We shall endeavour the mortification of our own sins, and we covenant to reprove sin in others, as far as the rule requires; promising in brotherly love to watch over one another, and to submit ourselves to the government of Christ in this church, and to attend the orders thereof. We do likewise solemnly agree by all means to study and endeavour the peace of this church, and the maintenance of the purity of the worship of God therein; that so the blessing of God may be vouchsafed to this his heritage. We do also give up ourselves to one another in the Lord, solemnly binding ourselves to walk together in the ways of his worship, and to cleave to his ordinances, according to the rules of his word. This you heartily comply with and consent to. You are now members in full communion with this church, purchased by the blood of Christ; and you do now seriously, solemnly, deliberately, and forever; in the presence of God, by whom you expect shortly to be judged, and by whom you hope to be acquitted; in the presence of an innumerable company of elect angels, and in the presence of this assembly; give up yourselves to God, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost; avouching the Lord Jehovah to be your God. You give up yourselves unto this church; submitting to the holy rule and ordinance of it; putting yourselves under the care and inspection of it; promising to embrace counsel and reproofs with humbleness and thankfulness; and duly to attend the administration of the ordinances of the Gospel in this church;



so long as your opportunities thereby to be edified in your holy faith shall be continued. We, then, the church of the Lord, do receive you into our sacred fellowship, as those whom we trust Christ hath received; and we promise to admit you to all the ordinances of the Gospel in fellowship with us; to watch over you with a spirit of love and meekness, not for your halting but helping; to treat you with all that affection which your sacred relation to us now calleth for; and to continue our ardent prayers for you, to the Father of Light, that you may have grace to keep this solemn covenant, you have now, before God, angels, and men, entered into; that so the sure mercies of the everlasting covenant may be your portion forever. Amen.'

To those persons who did not wholly unite with this church, but only assented to the covenant, for the privilege of having their children baptized, the following was read, immediately after the words 'consent to.'

'You do now in the presence of God, angels, and this assembly, avouch this one God in 3 persons to be your God; engaging to be his, only, constantly, and everlastingly. You do further promise to labour in preparing for the table of the Lord, that in due time you may make your approaches to God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord and Giver of eternal life, in all his ordinances and appointments; that at last you may give up your account with joy, unto Christ, the Judge of all.'

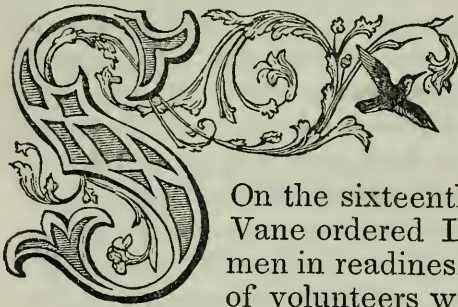


## CHAPTER V.

War with the Pequod Indians—Sandwich settled—Rev. Thomas Cobbet installed—Lynn named—Lands divided—Lord Brook's Death—Lynnfield, Hampton, Reading, Barnstable, Yarmouth, and Southampton settled—Lineage of Lewis—Ladies' Dresses regulated—New Inhabitants—Lady Moodey—Life of Hon. John Humfrey—1636 to 1642.

They spread broad maps of cities, where  
Once waved the forest trees.

MORRIS.



SOME of the Pequod Indians, having committed several murders upon the whites, induced the people of Massachusetts to commence a war upon them. On the sixteenth of June, 1636, Governor Henry Vane ordered Lieut. Edward Howe to have his men in readiness; and in August, four companies of volunteers were called out, one of which was commanded by Capt. Nathaniel Turner, of Lynn. They were directed to demand the murderers, with a thousand fathom of wampum, and some of the Indian children as hostages. At Block Island, they destroyed seven canoes, sixty wigwams, and many acres of corn, and killed one Indian. At New London, they burnt the canoes and wigwams, killed thirteen Indians, and returned on the fourteenth of September.

**1637.** On the eighteenth of April, 175 men were raised for a second expedition against the Pequods. Boston furnished 26, Lynn 21, (sixteen at first and five afterward,) Cambridge 19, Salem 18, Ipswich 17, Watertown 14, Dorchester 13, Charlestown 12, Roxbury 10, Newbury 8, Hingham 6, Weymouth 5, Marblehead 3, and Medford 3. The Connecticut troops attacked the Pequods on the twenty-sixth of May, a little before day-break. Sassacus, the Pequod Sachem, had built a rude fort, surrounded by a palisade of trees. The soldiers came to the fort in silence, discharged their muskets on the slumbering natives, and then set fire to the camp. Stoughton, who commanded the expedition, says, of 'six or seven hundred Indians,' many of



whom were women, and old men, and helpless children, only 'about seven escaped.' The soldiers from Lynn arrived three days after the massacre, and returned on the twenty-sixth of August. Sassacus, after this desolation of his tribe, fled to the Mohawks; where he was soon afterwards murdered, as it was supposed, by an Indian of the Narragansett tribe, who were his enemies. Thus perished Sassacus, the last and bravest of the Pequods; a chief, who in the annals of Greece would have received the fame of a hero,—in the war of American freedom, the praise of a patriot.

On the twenty-third of June, Governor Winthrop visited Lynn, and was escorted by the inhabitants to Salem. He returned on the twenty-eighth; travelling in the night, in consequence of the heat, which was so excessive that many persons died. Graham says, there were, at this time, but thirty-seven ploughs in the colony, most of which were at Lynn.

The members of the Quarterly Court this year, were John Humfrey and Edward Howe. In a tax of £400, the proportion of Lynn was £28 16. The General Court ordered that no person should make any cakes or buns, 'except for burials, marriages, and such like special occasions.'

This year a large number of people removed from Lynn, and commenced a new settlement at Sandwich. The grant of the town was made, on the third of April, by the Colony of Plymouth. 'It is ordered, that these ten men of Saugus, namely, Edmund Freeman, Henry Feake, Thomas Dexter, Edward Dillingham, William Wood, John Carman, Richard Chadwell, William Almy, Thomas Tupper, and George Knott, shall have liberty to view a place to sit down on, and have land sufficient for three score families, upon the conditions propounded to them by the Governor and Mr. Winslow.' Thomas Dexter did not remove, but the rest of the above named went, with forty-six other men from Lynn.

The Rev. Thomas Cobbet arrived from England, on the twenty-sixth of June, and was soon after installed in the ministry, as a colleague with Mr. Whiting. The two ministers continued together eighteen years. Mr. Whiting was styled Pastor, and Mr. Cobbet, Teacher.

This year the name of the town was changed from *Saugus* to LYNN. The record of the General Court, on the fifteenth of November, consists of only four words, '*Saugust is called Lin.*' This relates merely to the change of the name, the town having been incorporated in 1630. The name was given in compliment to Mr. Whiting, who came from Old Lynn, in Norfolk County, England.

Old Lynn, in England, was called Lynn Regis, or King's Lynn. It was patronized by King John, who, in 1215, received

great service from that town in his war against France. 'He granted them a mayor, and gave them his own sword to be carried before him, with a silver gilt cup, which they have to this day.'\* The ancient Britons gave it the name of *Lhyn*, a word signifying a lake or sheet of water. Campden says, it was 'so named from its spreading waters.' Speed calls the waters before the old town, 'The Washes of Linne.'† The Romans, on their conquest, called it *Durobrivem*,‡ a word signifying a place of water. All who have seen our Lynn, will admit how appropriate is its name to its situation.

An old British legend of 1360, asserts that the 'Friar or Linn,' by magic art, went to the North Pole, and came to America. There is a very beautiful ballad, of an early date, entitled 'The Heire of Linne.' I have only room for two stanzas.

The bonnie heire, the weel faured heire,  
And the weary heire of Linne,  
Yonder he stands at his father's gate,  
And naebody bids him come in.

\* \* \* \* \*

Then he did spy a little wee lock  
And the key gied linking in,  
And he gat goud and money therein,  
To pay the lands o' Linne.

A town meeting was held this year, in which Daniel Howe, Richard Walker, and Henry Collins were chosen a committee to divide the lands; or, as it was expressed in the record, 'To lay out ffarmes.' The land was laid out in those parts of the town best adapted to cultivation; and the woodlands were reserved as common property, and called the 'town common,' not being divided until sixty-nine years after.

**1638.** The committee appointed by the town to divide the lands, completed their task, and a book was provided, in which the names of the proprietors, with the number of acres allotted to each, were recorded. That book is lost; but a copy of the first three pages has been preserved in the files of the Quarterly Court, at Salem, from which the following is transcribed. I have taken the justifiable liberty, in this instance, to spell the words correctly, and to supply a few omissions, which are included in brackets. The word 'ten,' which is added to many of the allotments, implies that a separate lot of ten acres was granted.

---

\* Cambden's Britannia.  
† Antoninus' Itinerary.

† Speed's Chronicles of England.



## PAGE I.

‘These lands following were given to the inhabitants of the town of Lynn, Anno Domini 1638.

To the Right Honorable the Lord Brook, 800 acres, as it is estimated.

To Mr. Thomas Willis, upland and meadow, 500 acres, as it is estimated.

Mr. Edward Holyoke, upland and meadow, 500 acres, as it is estimated.

Henry Collins, upland and meadow, 80 acres, and ten.

Mr [Joseph] Floyd, upland and meadow, 60 acres, and ten.

Edmund and Francis Ingalls, upland and meadow, 120 acres.

Widow Bancroft, 100 acres.

Widow Hammond, 60 acres.

George Burrill, 200 acres.

John Wood, 100 acres.

Thomas Talmage, 200.

Nicholas Brown, 200.

William Cowdrey, 60.

Thomas Loughton, 60.

John Cooper, 200.

Allin Breed, 200.

John Pool, 200.

Edward Howe, 200, and ten.

Thomas Sayre, 60.

Job Sayre, 60.

Thomas Chadwell, 60.

William Walton, 60.

Christopher Foster, 60.

William Ballard, 60.

Josias Stanbury, 100.

Edmund Farrington, 200.

Nicholas Potter, 60.

William Knight, 60.

Edward Tomlins, 200, and twenty.

[‘Mr.’ ] South, 100.

Boniface Burton, 60.

John Smith, 60.

Mr. Edward Howell, 500.’

## PAGE II.

‘To Nicholas Batter, 60.

Mr. [Richard] Sadler, 200, and the rock by his house.

Joseph Arnitage, 60.

Godfrey Armitage, 60.  
To Matthew West, upland and meadow, 30, and ten.  
George Farr, 30, and ten.  
James Boutwell, 60 acres.  
Zachary Fitch, 30, and ten.  
Jarrett Spenser, 30 acres.  
Jenkin Davis, 30, and ten.  
George Taylor, 30, and ten.  
[William] Thorn, 30, and ten.  
Thomas Townsend, 60.  
Thomas Parker, 30, and ten.  
Francis Lightfoot, 30, and ten.  
Richard Johnson, 30, and ten.  
Robert Parsons, 30, and ten.  
Edward Burcham, 30, and ten.  
Anthony Newhall, 30.  
Thomas Newhall, 30.  
Thomas Marshall, 30, and ten.  
Michael Spenser, 30.  
Timothy Tomlins, 80.  
[William] Harcher, 20.  
Richard Roolton, 60.  
[Nathaniel] Handforth, 20.  
Thomas Hudson, 60.  
Thomas Halsye, 100.  
Samuel Bennett, 20.  
John Elderkin, 20.  
Abraham Belknap, 40.  
Robert Driver, 20.  
Joseph Rednap, 40.  
[John] Deacon, 20.  
Philip Kertland, senior, 10.'

## PAGE III.

' To Philip Kertland, junior, 10.  
[Goodman] Crosse, 10.  
Hugh Burt, 60.  
[Goodman] Wathin, 10.  
Richard Brooks, 10.  
Francis Godson, 30.  
George Welbye, —  
William Partridge, upland, 10 acres.  
Henry Gains, 40.  
Richard Wells, 10.  
[Joseph] Pell, 10.  
John White, 20.



Edward Baker, 40.

James Axey, 40.

William Edmonds, 10.

Edward Ireson, 10.

Jeremy Howe, 20.

William George, 20.

Nathaniel Whiteridge, 10.

George Frail, 10.

Edmund Bridges, 10.

Richard Longley, 40.

Thomas Talmage, junior, 20.

Thomas Coldham, 60.

Adam Hawkes, upland, 100.

Thomas Dexter, 350.

Daniel Howe, upland and meadow, 60.

Richard Walker, upland and meadow, 200.

Ephraim Howe, next to the land of his father, upland, 10.

[Thomas] Ivory, 10.

Timothy Cooper, 10.

Samuel Hutchinson, 10, by estimation.

Mr. Samuel Whiting, the pastor, 200.

Mr. Thomas Cobbet, the teacher, 200.'

'These three pages were taken out of the town book of the Records of Lynn, the 10th. 1 mo. Anno Domini 59, 60, [March 10, 1660,] by me,

ANDREW MANSFIELD, Town Recorder.'

The 'Lord Brook' to whom the grant of 800 acres was made, 'was one of those patriots,' says Ricraft, who so ardently longed for liberty, that he determined to seek it in America.' He was shot with a musket-ball, through the visor of his helmet, in the civil war of 1642, while storming the Cathedral of Litchfield. Sir Walter Scott alludes to this sacrilege in *Marmion*.

— When fanatic Brook  
The fair cathedral stormed and took;  
But thanks to heaven and good St. Chad,  
A guerdon meet the spoiler had.

'He was killed by a shot fired from St. Chad's Cathedral, on St. Chad's day, and received his death wound in that very eye with which he had said he hoped to see the ruin of all the cathedrals in England.'

'Though the 8680 acres of land thus laid out among 100 families, comprised the best portion of Lynn and Saugus, the people thought they had not sufficient room, and petitioned the court for more. On the thirteenth of March, 'Lynn was granted 6 miles into the country; and Mr. Hawthorne and Leift Daven-

port to view and inform how the land beyond lyeth, whether it be fit for another plantation or no.' The land laid out by this order was for many years called Lynn End, and now constitutes the town of Lynnfield. The court afterwards very prudently ordered, that the Governor and Assistants should 'take care that the Indians have satisfaction for their right at Lynn.'

The preceding winter was extremely severe, the snow continued from November sixteenth to the fourth of April, and the spring was so cold that the farmers were compelled to plant their corn 'two or three times.'

On the first of June, between the hours of three and four in the afternoon, there was an earthquake. It shook the whole country very heavily, making a noise like the rattling of coaches, and continued about four minutes. The earthquake was very great; people found it difficult to stand, and furniture and chimneys were thrown down. Other smaller shocks occurred for several weeks after.

On the same day, the 'Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company' was formed, at Boston. Daniel Howe, of Lynn, was chosen Lieutenant. Other members of this company from Lynn have been — in 1638, Nathaniel Turner, Edward Tomlins, Richard Walker; in 1639, Samuel Bennett; in 1640, John Humfrey, Thomas Marshall; in 1641, John Humfrey, jun., Robert Bridges, Adam Otley; in 1642, John Wood; in 1643, Benjamin Smith; in 1648, John Cole; in 1694, Thomas Baker; in 1717, Benjamin Gray; in 1822, Daniel N. Breed, George Johnson, Ebenezer Neal.

A settlement was this year begun at Hampton, in New Hampshire, by Rev. Stephen Bachiler, Christopher Hussey, and fourteen others, most of whom had been inhabitants of Lynn.

Many farmers pastured their cows in one drove, and watched them alternately. When it came to Mr. John Gillow's turn, an ill-minded man detained him in conversation, till the cows strayed into a field of corn, where two of them ate so much that they became sick, and one of them died. It happened that these two cows belonged to the man who had occasioned the mischief, who complained of Mr. Gillow before the Court of Assistants, at Boston, on the seventh of September. As it was proved, that the man had boasted of having designed that the cattle should stray, the case was decided in Mr. Gillow's favor.

On the sixth of September, Mr. John Humfrey sold to Emanuel Downing, of Salem, 'the 2 ponds and so much high ground about the ponds, as is needful to keep the Duck Coys, privately set, from disturbance of plowmen, heardsmen, and others passing by that way, which he may enclose, so as he take not in above fifty acres of the upland round about the same.' These two ponds were probably Coy and Deep ponds, near Forest



River. In the Registry, at Salem, where the above is recorded, Mr. Humfrey is called 'of Salem,' but that is not a copy of the original grant. In the early time, the deeds were not recorded literally, but only a sketch of them was entered by the clerk. A common form of beginning deeds then was, 'To all Christian People.' One deed is recorded, which commences thus — 'To all Christian People, Fishermen, and Indians.'

**1639.** Among those who promoted the settlement of New England, were several of the family of LEWIS. Some of them were in the country at a very early period, but the name first appears at Lynn this year. I have copious memoirs of this family, from which I shall make a few brief extracts, that I may not be like the poet described by Leyden, who

Saved other names, and left his own unsung.\*

When the whole country was a wilderness, Thomas Lewis came from Wales to establish a plantation. He made his first visit to Saco, then called by the Indians *Saga-dahock*, in 1628; and on the twelfth of February, 1629, received the following grant, a copy of which was preserved in the archives of Massachusetts; and which I am more desirous to record here, because Mr. Folsom, the excellent historian of Saco, appears not to have known of its existence.

*'To all Christian People, to whom this present writing indented shall come, The Council for the Affairs in New England . . . in consideration that THOMAS LEWIS, Gentleman, hath already been at the charge to transport himself and others to take a view of New England . . . for the bettering of his experience in the advancing of a Plantation, and doth now wholly intend, by God's assistance, to plant there, both for the good of his Majesty's realms and for the propagation of the Christian Religion among those Infidels; and in consideration that the said Thomas Lewis, together with Captain Richard Bonython, and their associates, have undertaken, at their own proper costs and charges, to transport Fifty Persons thither, within seven years . . . have given all that part of the Maine Land, commonly called and known by the name of SAGADAHOCK . . . containing in breadth, from northeast to southwest, along by the Sea, Four Miles in a straight line, accounting seventeen hundred and three score yards, according to the standard of England, to every mile, and Eight English Miles upon the Maine Land, upon the north side of the River Sagadahock . . . He and they yielding and paying unto our Sovereign Lord, the King, one fifth part of gold and silver, one other fifth part to the Council aforesaid.'*

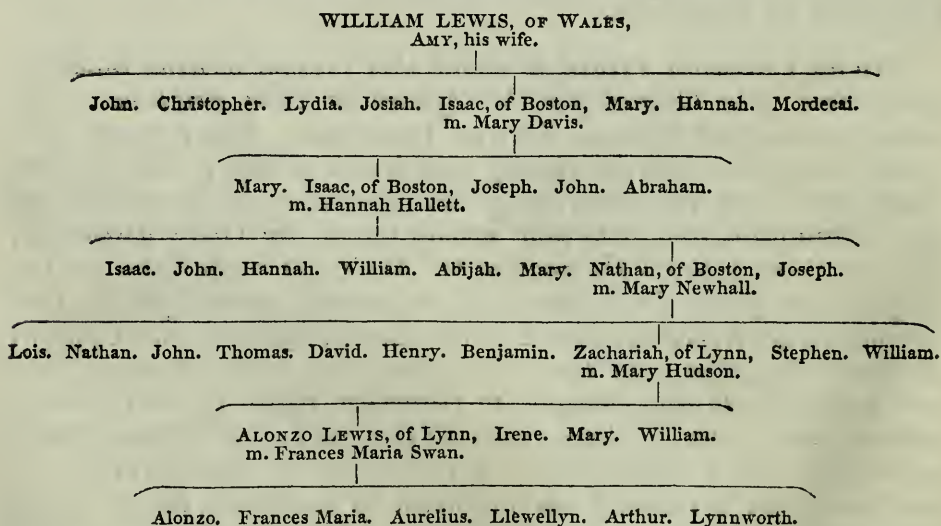
---

\* Quod aliena testimonium redderem, in eo non fraudabo avum meum. *Paterculus*.  
I shall not deprive my own grandfather of the praise I would give to a stranger.

This deed was signed by Edward Gorges; and the Rev. William Blackstone, of Boston, was named attorney for the Council. This grant included 32 square miles, and comprised the whole of the town of Saco. Thomas Lewis died in 1640. Judith, his eldest daughter and heiress, married James Gibbins.

WILLIAM LEWIS was descended from a very respectable family in Wales. His descendants enjoy great satisfaction in being able to trace their descent from a very high antiquity. He came to Boston in 1636. In the year 1640, he and his wife Amy are recorded by Rev. John Eliot, of Roxbury, as attendants at his church. In 1653, he became one of the proprietors of the pleasant inland town of Lancaster, on the Nashaway river, and was the third person in regard to wealth among the first settlers of that town. He died December 1, 1671. He had nine children; 1. John, born Nov. 1, 1635. 2. Christopher, born Dec. 2, 1636. 3. Lydia, born Dec. 25, 1639. 4. Josiah, born July 28, 1641. 5. Isaac, born April 14, 1644. 6. Mary, baptized Aug. 2, 1646. 7. Hannah, baptized March 18, 1648. 8. Mordecai, born June 1, 1650. His son John returned to Boston, and built a house on land which his father had purchased of Governor Richard Bellingham.

### LINEAGE OF ALONZO LEWIS.



Edmund Lewis was one of the early proprietors of Watertown, and was admitted a freeman May 25, 1636. On the fourteenth of October, 1638, he was one of the committee appointed to lay out the lands in that town. He came to Lynn in 1639, and was the first settler in Lewis street. He died in January, 1651. The name of his wife was Mary, and his children were John, Thomas, James, and Nathaniel. His descendants remain. The name of Lewis is the fifth in Lynn, in regard to numbers.



George Lewis came from East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, England. He was at Plymouth, in 1633. He removed to Scituate, and afterward to Barnstable. He married Sarah Jenkins, in England, and had nine children, of whom Joseph and John were killed by the Indians, in the war of 1675-6. Dr. Winslow Lewis, of Boston, is descended from this family.

On the fourteenth of January there was an earthquake.

Another grant of land was made to the town, by the General Court, on the seventh of September. 'The petition of the Inhabitants of Lynn, for a place for an inland plantation, at the head of their bounds is granted them, 4 miles square, as the place will afford; upon condition that the petitioners shall, within two years, make some good proceeding in planting, so as it may be a village, fit to contain a convenient number of inhabitants, which may in dewe time have a church there; and so as such as shall remove to inhabit there, shall not withall keepe their accommodations in Linn above 2 years after their removal to the said village, upon pain to forfeit their interest in one of them at their election; except this court shall see fit cause to dispense further with them.' The settlement thus begun was called Lynn Village, and included Reading, South Reading, and North Reading.

Two other settlements were this year begun by people who removed from Lynn; one at Barnstable, and the other at Yarmouth.

The General Court allowed the town fifty pounds to build a bridge over Saugus River, and fifty shillings annually to keep it in repair. They forbade the people to spread bass or codfish upon their lands, as they had been accustomed to do, for the enrichment of the soil. A tax of one thousand pounds was laid, of which the proportion of Lynn was £79.19.9. On the third of December, the court laid a fine of ten pounds upon the town, for not maintaining a watch against the Indians.

The following order passed by the General Court for the regulation of women's dresses, will be interesting to my lady readers. 'No garment shall be made with short sleeves; and such as have garments already made with short sleeves, shall not wear the same, unless they cover the arm to the wrist; and hereafter no person whatever shall make any garment for women with sleeves more than half an ell wide;' that is, twenty-two and a half inches. Our early legislators were anxious to keep the minds, as well as the persons, of their women 'in good shape.' It seems that in 1637, the ladies of Boston were accustomed to meet for social improvement; on which Governor Winthrop remarks, 'That though women might meet, some few together, to pray and edify one another, yet such a set assembly, where sixty or more did meet every week, and one woman in a propheticall way, by resolving questions of doctrine, and expound-

ing scripture, took upon her the whole exercise, was agreed to be disorderly, and without rule.' What *would* they have thought in these later times, when women write books, and supply our pulpits. It might have been well for human welfare, if our legislators had always been as harmlessly employed, as when they were cutting out dresses for the ladies.

**1640.** Many new inhabitants appear at Lynn about this time. The great tide of immigration ceased in 1641, and after that time not many came over.

Hugh Alley, farmer, lived on the corner of Market and Front streets. He had a son Hugh, who married Rebecca Hood, December 9, 1681, and had seven children. Solomon, born October 11, 1682; Jacob, born January 28, 1683; Eleazer, born November 1, 1686; Hannah, born August 16, 1689; Richard, born July 31, 1691; Joseph, born June 22, 1693; Benjamin, born February 24, 1695.

John Alley, farmer, lived in Market street, and had five children. John, born in January, 1675; Hannah, born January 22, 1679; Rebecca, born May 28, 1683; Hugh, born February 15, 1685; William, born July 14, 1683. The descendants of Hugh and John Alley are very numerous.

Samuel Aborne, a farmer, resided at first on the Common, and afterward removed to Lynnfield, where his descendants remain.

Robert Bridges was admitted a freeman, June 2, 1641. In the same year he was a member of the Ancient Artillery Company and a captain of the militia. He had a large share in the Iron Works. In 1644, he was chosen representative, and appointed a member of the Quarterly Court, at Salem. In 1646, he was Speaker of the House of Representatives, and the next year became an Assistant, in which office he continued until his death, in 1656.

Lieut. Thomas Bancroft, son of widow Bancroft, had two children; Ebenezer, born April 26, 1667; Mary, born May 16, 1670. He died March 12, 1705. His wife Elizabeth died May 1, 1711. His descendants remain.

William Bassett, farmer, died March 31, 1703. He had two sons; William, who married Sarah Hood, October 25, 1675; and Elisha, who married Elizabeth——. His descendants remain.

William Clark, farmer, died March 5, 1683. His children were Hannah, John, Lydia, Sarah, Mary, and Elizabeth. His descendants remain.

John Diven, died October 4, 1684. He had a son John.

Thomas Farrar, farmer, lived in Nahant street, and died February 23, 1694. His wife Elizabeth died January 8, 1680. He had one son, Thomas, who married Abigail Collins, March 3, 1681; and four daughters; Hannah, Sarah, Susannah, and Elizabeth.

John Fuller came from England, with his brother Samuel, in



1630, and when they arrived in Boston, 'only seven huts were erected.' After residing there several years, Samuel went to Scituate, and John, in 1644, came to Lynn, and settled at the western end of Waterhill street. He was chosen Representative in 1655, and Clerk of the Writs in 1662. He died June 29, 1666. The name of his wife was Elizabeth, and he had five children — Lieut. John Fuller, who married Elizabeth Farrington, and died April 24, 1695 — William, Susannah, Elizabeth, and James. Several of his descendants have borne respectable offices, and some of them remain.

Zaccheus Gould, owned at one time, the Mills on Saugus River. He had a son Daniel.

John Gillow died in 1673. The name of his wife was Rose. He had two sons, Benjamin and Thomas.

Nathaniel Hathorne had two children; Ebenezer, who married Esther Witt, December 26, 1683, and Nathaniel.

Richard Haven, farmer, lived near the Flax Pond. His wife Susannah died February 7, 1682. His children were Hannah, born 1645, Mary, Joseph, Richard, Susannah, Sarah, John, Martha, Samuel, Jonathan, Nathaniel and Moses. Several of his sons were among the first settlers of Framingham.

Joseph Holloway died November 29, 1693. He had a son Joseph, who married Mary —, and had four children. Mary, born April 16, 1675; Samuel, born November 2, 1677; Edward, born February 1, 1683. John, born October 11, 1686. His descendants remain, and spell their name Hallowell.

Robert Howard had a son Edward, who married Martha —, and had two children; Amos, born April 16, 1696; Jane, born March 4, 1699. His descendants remain.

Richard Hood, came from Lynn in England. He lived in Nahant street, and died September 12, 1695. He had three sons; Richard, born 1670; Joseph, born July 8, 1674; Benjamin, born January 3, 1677. His descendants remain, and are among the principal inhabitants of Nahant. In those early days, a young man, who was inclined to indulge in the laudable custom of courting, went to visit a young lady of this family named Agnes. As he was returning late one evening, he was overheard saying to himself — 'Well, so far proceeded towards courting Agnes.' This phrase became common, and has been introduced into an English comedy.

Edward Ireson died December 4, 1675. His son Benjamin married Mary Leach, August 1, 1680, and had a son Edward, born April 9, 1681.

Thomas Keyser was mate of a vessel which sailed from Boston. Governor Winthrop tells a story of one of his men, who was whipped for stealing a gold ring, and some other articles from him at Portsmouth.

Andrew Mansfield came from Exeter, in England, to Boston,

in 1636. He came to Lynn in 1640. He was a farmer, and lived in Boston street. The neighborhood in which he lived was called Mansfield's End. He was town clerk in 1660, and died in 1692, aged 94 years. He had a son Andrew, who was Representative in 1680, and who married Elizabeth Conant, January 10, 1681. His descendants remain.

John Mansfield, a tailor, freeman in 1643, died in 1671, aged 52 years.

Lady Deborah Moodey came to Lynn, in 1640. Five years before, she went from one of the remote counties in England, to London, where she remained in opposition to a statute, which enjoined that no persons should reside beyond a limited time, from their own homes. On the twenty-first of April, the court of the star-chamber ordered, that 'Dame Deborah Mowdie, and the others, should return to their hereditaments in forty days, in the good example necessary to the poorer class. On the fifth of April, 1640, soon after her arrival at Lynn, she united with the church at Salem. On the thirteenth of May, the General Court granted her 400 acres of land. In 1641, she purchased Mr. John Humfrey's farm, 'called Swampscot,' for which she paid £1,100. Lechford, in 1641, says, 'Lady Moody lives at Lynn, but is of Salem church. She is, good lady, almost undone, by buying Master Humphries' farm, Swampscot.' Sometime afterward she became imbued with the erroneous idea, that the baptism of infants was a sinful ordinance, for which, and other opinions, she was excommunicated. In 1643, she removed to Long Island. Governor Winthrop says, 'the Lady Moodye, a wise, and anciently religious woman, being taken with the error of denying baptism to infants, was dealt with by many of the elders, and others, and admonished by the church of Salem, whereof she was a member; but persisting still, and to avoid further trouble, she removed to the Dutch, against the advice of all her friends.' After her arrival at Long Island, she experienced much trouble from the Indians, her house being assaulted by them many times. Her wealth enabled her to render assistance to Governor Stuyvesant, of New York, in some difficulties which he encountered in 1654; and so great was her influence with him, that he conceded the nomination of the magistrates that year to her. She was of a noble family, and had a son, Sir Henry Moody. With the exception of her troubling the church with her religious opinions, she appears to have been a lady of great worth.

Robert Rand was a farmer at Woodend. He died November 8, 1694. His wife, Elizabeth, died August 29, 1693. His children were Robert, Zachary, Elizabeth, and Mary, and his descendants remain.

Henry Rhodes was a farmer, and lived on the western side of Saugus River. He was born in 1608, and had two sons. Jona-



than died April 7, 1677. Henry had a son Henry. Their descendants remain.

John Tarbox had two sons; John; and Samuel, who married Rebecca Armitage, November 14, 1665, and had eighteen children. Samuel died September 12, 1715, aged 93 years. His descendants remain.

Captain Shubael Walker was buried January 24, 1689. He lived at the Swampscot Farms.

John Witt died in December, 1675. His children were Ann, Elizabeth, Sarah, Mary, Martha, John who married Elizabeth Baker, January 14, 1676, and Thomas who married Bethia Potter, February 26, 1675. His descendants remain.

Thomas Welman died in 1672. His children are Abigail, Isaac, Elizabeth, Sarah, and Mary.

Other inhabitants were, Andrew Allen, Theophilus Bayley, died 1694, John Cole, Hugh Churchman, died 1644, Wentworth Daniels, Henry Fitch, Daniel Fairfield, John Farrington, Abraham Ottley, Adam Ottley, Thomas Gaines, Tobias Haskell, James Hubbard, William Hubbard, Joseph Howe, William Knight, Michael Lambard, Robert Mansfield, Thomas Mansfield, Michael Milner, went to Long Island in 1640, Richard Mower, Thomas Putnam, Richard Pray, Quentin Pray, Thomas Purchis, Edward Paine, Hugh Stacey, John Stacey, George Taylor, William Taylor, John Tilton, William Tilton, Daniel Trumbull, Nathaniel Tyler, William Wells, Jonathan Witt.

In the short space of ten years from its settlement, we have seen six other towns deriving their origin from Lynn; yet the place continued to abound with inhabitants, and this year beheld the commencement of the seventh. About 'forty' families, 'finding themselves straitened,' left the town with the design of settling a new plantation. They invited Mr. Abraham Pierson, of Boston, to become their minister, who with seven of the emigrants entered into a church covenant before they left Lynn. They sailed in a vessel commanded by Captain Daniel Howe, to Scout's Bay, in the western part of Long Island, where they purchased land of Mr. James Forrett, agent of Lord Stirling, and agreed with the Indians for their right. On receiving information of this, the Dutch laid claim to that part of the island, on account of a previous purchase of the Indians, and sent men to take possession, who set up the arms of the Prince of Orange on a tree. The Lynn people, disregarding the claims of the Dutch, cut down the trees and began to build. Captain Howe likewise took down the Prince's arms, and instead thereof an Indian drew a very 'unhandsome face.' This conduct highly incensed the Dutch governor, William Kieft, whom Mr. Irving, in one of his humorous works, has characterized by the appellation of 'William the Testy,' but whom Mr. Hubbard denominates 'a discreet

man,' who, on the thirteenth of May, sent Cornelius Van Ten Hoven the secretary, the undersheriff, a sergeant, and twenty-five soldiers, to break up the settlement. They found eight men, with a woman and an infant, who had erected one cottage, and were engaged in building another. They took six of the men, whose names were John Farrington, William Harcher, Philip Kertland, Nathaniel Kertland, Job Sayre, and George Wells, and brought them before the governor. These he examined on oath, and then put them in prison, where they remained while he wrote a Latin letter to the governor of Massachusetts. To this Mr. Winthrop replied, in the same language, that he would neither maintain the Lynn people in an unjust action, nor suffer them to be injured. On the reception of this reply, the Dutch governor liberated the men, after they had signed an agreement to leave the place. They accordingly removed more than eighty miles, to the eastern part of the island, where they purchased land of the Indians, and planted a town, which, in remembrance of the place from which they sailed in England, they called Southampton.

Dr. P. S. Townsend, of New York, says, the people of Lynn also settled five other towns on Long Island; Flushing, Gravesend, Jamaica, Hempstead, and Oyster Bay.

At the court, on the thirteenth of May, William Hathorne, Samuel Symonds, and Timothy Tomlins, were appointed to lay out 'the nearest, cheapest, safest, and most convenient way' between Lynn and Winnisimet ferry.

Lynn Village, now South Reading, was ordered to be exempted from taxes, as soon as seven houses should be built, and seven families settled.

William Hathorne and Timothy Tomlins, having been appointed to lay out the bounds of the town of Lynn, made report, on the fourth of June, that they had fixed the bounds at Charlestown line, Reading Pond, Ipswich River, and Salem.

The Court ordered that grain should be received as a lawful payment for debts; Indian corn at 5s., rye at 6s. 8d., and wheat at 7s. a bushel. The price of a cow was £5.

Mr. Richard Sadler was appointed Clerk of the Writs. The duties of this office were, to fill warrants in civil actions, and to keep a record of births and deaths. It was legally distinct from the office of Town Clerk, who was at the first called the Town Recorder, though in many instances both offices were held by the same individual.

Mr. Humfrey's barn at Swampscot, with all his corn and hay, to the value of one hundred and sixty pounds, was burnt by the carelessness of his servant, Henry Stevens, in setting fire to some gunpowder. At the court of Assistants, on the first of November, 'Henry Stevens, for firing the barn of his master, Mr. John Humfrey, he was ordered to be servant to Mr.



Humfrey, for 21 years from this day, towards recompensing him.' The court afterward allowed Mr. Humfrey for his loss and his good services, £250.

There was one woman in the town at this time, who contended that all things ought to be common, as at one time among the early Christians; but she found it difficult to persuade the people that she had as good a right to their property as themselves. She went 'from house to house,' helping herself to such little accommodations as she wished, till her demands became so extravagant, that she was brought before the Quarterly Court at Salem. On the twenty-ninth of September the following record was made. 'Mary Bowdwell of Lyn, for her exorbitancy, not working, but liveing idly, and stealing, and taking away other victuals, pretending communitie of all things; The court sentence that she shall be whipped; but throwe their clemency she was only admonished, and respited till next courte.'

This year a new version of the Psalms was made for public worship. It was an octavo volume of 400 pages, and was the first book printed in America. The following is a specimen of the poetry, from Psalm 44.

'Our eares have heard our fathers tell  
and reverently record  
The wondrous workes that thou hast done  
in *olden time*, O Lord.

How thou didst cast the Gentiles out  
and stroid them with strong hand;  
planting our fathers in their place  
and gavest to them their land.

They conquered not by sword nor strength  
the land of thy behest,  
But by thy hand, thy arm, thy grace,  
because thou loudest them best.'

**1641.** Lord Say, having an intention of forming a plantation at New Providence, one of the Bahama Islands, had engaged Mr. Humfrey in the design, with the promise of making him governor of the new colony. Some of the Lynn people had determined to accompany him; but the intention was frustrated, by the island falling, for a time, under the government of Spain.

Mr. John Humfrey was a native of Dorchester, in Dorsetshire, England, a lawyer, and a man of considerable wealth and good reputation. He married Susan, the second daughter of Thomas, Earl of Lincoln, and sister of Frances, the wife of Mr. John Gorges, and of Arbella, the wife of Mr. Isaac Johnson. He was one of the most influential in promoting the settlement of the colony, and the people of Massachusetts will ever regard him as one of their earliest and most efficient benefactors. He was one of the original patentees of the colony, and the treasurer of the company at Plymouth, in England; and by his exertions many donations were obtained, and many persons,

among whom were some of the ministers, were induced to emigrate. He was chosen Deputy Governor in 1630, and Assistant in 1632, both before his arrival; and such was the respect in which he was held, that when the formulary for the constituting of freemen was in debate, an exception was made in favor of 'the old planters and Mr. Humfrey.' He arrived at Lynn, in 1634, received several liberal grants from the court, and fixed his residence at Swampscot. In discharging the duties of an Assistant in the general government, he devoted his time and energies for seven years to the service of the state, and seems not to have been surpassed in devotedness to her welfare. He became a member of the Artillery Company in 1640; and in June, 1641, was appointed to the command of all the militia in the county, with the title of Sergeant Major General. But with all his honors and possessions, a shade of dissatisfaction had spread itself over his prospects, which his numerous misfortunes contributed to darken. The disappointment of the Bahamas must have been severely felt, by a mind so ambitious of honor as his appears to have been; and it is not improbable that he experienced a secret chagrin at seeing the young and uninformed Henry Vane promoted to the office of governor, above one whose years, knowledge, and services, entitled him to precedence. It is probable likewise that his affection for his wife, whose hopes were in the land of her nativity, had some influence in determining his conduct. Living so far removed from the elegant circles in which she had delighted, and having lost the sister who might have been the companion of her solitude, the Lady Susan was weary of the privations of the wilderness, the howling of the wild beasts, and the uncouth manners of the savages, and had become lonely, disconsolate, and homesick. She who had been the delight of her father's house, and had glittered in all the pride of youth and beauty, in the court of the first monarch in Europe, was now solitary and sad, separated by a wide ocean from her father's home. The future greatness of America, which was then uncertain and ideal, presented no inducement to her mind to counterbalance the losses which were first to be endured; and the cold and barren wilderness of Swampscot, populated by its few lonely cottages, round which the Indians were roaming by day, and the wolves making their nightly excursions, had nothing lovely to offer to soothe her sorrows or elevate her hopes. What the misfortunes and disappointments of Mr. Humfrey had begun, her importunities completed. He sold the principal part of his farm to Lady Moody, and returned to England with his wife, on the twenty-sixth of October. They were much censured for leaving their children, but their intention of visiting the Bahamas, and the approaching inclemency of the season, rendered it



imprudent to take them, and they undoubtedly intended to return or send for them. That Mr. Humfrey possessed deep sympathies, his letters sufficiently evince; and it would be extremely uncharitable to suppose that the Lady Susan was without the endowments of maternal love. A woman of high feelings and keen sensibilities, the daughter of an English Earl, and according to Mr. Mather's own account, of 'the best family of any nobleman then in England' — it cannot be supposed that she was destitute of those affections which form the characteristic charm of her sex. The emotions of the heart are not always regulated by rule, and disappointment sometimes makes sad havoc with the best feelings of our nature.

'Tis thus with the dreams of the high heaving heart,  
They come but to blaze, and they blaze to depart;  
Their gossamer wings are too thin to abide  
The chilling of sorrow, the burning of pride;  
They come but to brush o'er its young gallant swell,  
Like bright birds over ocean, but never to dwell.'

JOHN NEAL.

The misfortunes which afterward befel some of the children, inflicted a wound on the heart of the affectionate father from which he never recovered. In a letter to Governor Winthrop, dated 4th September, 1646, he says: 'It is true the want of that lost occasion, the loss of all I had in the world, doth, upon rubbings of that irreparable blow, sometimes a little trouble me; but in no respect equal to this, that I see my hopes and possibilities of ever enjoying those I did or was willing to suffer any thing for, utterly taken away. But by what intermediate hand soever this has befallen me, whose neglects and unkindness God I hope will mind them for their good, yet I desire to look at his hand for good I doubt not to me, though I do not so fully see which way it may work. Sir, I thank you, again and again, and that in sincerity, for any fruits of your goodness to me and mine; and for any thing contrary, I bless his name, I labor to forget, and desire him to pardon.' Mr. Humfrey died in 1661, and in the same year, his administrators, Joseph Humfrey and Edmund Batter, claimed the five hundred acres of land 'by a pond of fresh water' in Lynnfield, which had been given him by the court. The character of Mr. Humfrey has been drawn with conciseness by Governor Winthrop, who represents him to have been 'a gentleman of special parts of learning and activity, and a godly man.' His children were John, Joseph, Theophilus, Ann, Sarah, and Dorcas. The first married William Palmer, of Ardfinan, Ireland, and afterward the Rev. John Miles of Swanzey. I have in my possession a deed signed by her, and sealed with the arms of the house of Lincoln.

Mr. Humfrey appears to have owned nearly all the lands from

Sagamore Hill to Forest River. His house was near the eastern end of Humfrey's beach, and his place there was called the Swampscot Farm. His lands were chiefly disposed of in 1681, when his daughter Ann sold ten acres to William Bussett, Jr., and twenty acres with a house in Nahant street to Richard Hood. Robert Ingalls bought nine acres of the farm at Swampscot for two hundred and eighty pounds, and Richard Johnson had sixty acres of salt marsh for thirty pounds. The wind-mill at Sagamore Hill was valued at sixty pounds. The whole of Mr. Humfrey's lands, at Swampscot, were about thirteen hundred acres, besides five hundred at Lynnfield. In 1685, we find that Daniel King, senior, having bought four hundred acres of this land, mortgages the same to widow Elizabeth Curwen of Salem. He afterward married her, and thus secured it; but in 1690 it was again mortgaged to Benjamin Brown of Salem. In 1693, March 20, it was sold by Elizabeth and Daniel King to Walter Phillips and John Phillips, ancestors of the numerous and respectable family of Phillips. This tract of four hundred acres is mentioned as beginning at the farther end of the beach beyond Fishing Point, and extending to the west end of the Long Pond. Another description of this same four hundred acres, makes it extend to Beaver Brook, which is the little stream next eastward of Phillip's Pond, and runs out at the bounds between Lynn and Salem. Henry Mayo bought Fishing Point, which is the point next east of Swampscot, which he sold, March 10, 1696, to Walter Phillips, for one hundred and forty pounds. Mr. Humfrey's house and the land adjacent, was bought by Hon. Ebenezer Burrill, in whose family it remained until 1797, when it was bought by Robert Hooper of Marblehead. In 1842, his daughter Hannah, widow of William Reed, sold it to Mr. Enoch Redington Mudge of Lynn, who has built, near the old house, a beautiful gothic stone cottage, worthy of the olden time.

In the early part of this year, says Governor Winthrop, 'a goodly maid of the church of Linne, going in a deep snow from Meadford homeward, was lost, and some of her clothes found after among the rocks.'

**1642.** The winter was exceedingly cold, with deep snow, and the harbor was passable with teams for five weeks. The Indians said that the weather had not been so cold for forty years.

A great alarm was occasioned through the colony by a report that the Indians intended to exterminate the English. The people were ordered to keep a watch from sunset to sunrise, and blacksmiths were directed to suspend all other business till the arms of the colony were repaired. A house was built for the



soldiers, and another, about forty feet long, for a safe retreat for the women and children of the town, in case of an attack from the Indians. These houses were within the limits of Saugus, about eighty rods from the eastern boundary, and about the same distance south of Walnut street. The cellars of both these buildings remain, and near them, on the east, is a fine unfailing spring.

At the Salem Court, July 12, 'George Sagamore and Edward, alias Ned,' prosecuted Francis Lightfoot for land. The case was referred to the Boston court.

Governor Dudley, in a letter to his son in England, dated November 28, remarks, 'There is a want of school-masters hereabouts.'

At the Quarterly Court, December 14, 'The Lady Deborah Moodie, Mrs. King, and the wife of John Tillton, were presented, for houldinge that the baptising of Infants is noe ordinance of God.'



Mark X : 14.

## CHAPTER VI.

Iron Foundry established, the first in America — Joseph Jenks, and other Inhabitants — 'Simple Cobler' — Laws concerning Courtship and Long Hair — More Inhabitants — Persecution of the Baptists — Johnson's Description of Lynn — Shoes — Money Coined — The First Fire Engine — Life of Rev. Thomas Cobbet. 1643 to 1656.

— A second multitude,  
With wondrous art, founded the massy ore. MILTON.



IRON ORE was discovered in Lynn at a very early period, but no attempt was made to work it until the year 1643. It is of the kind called Bog Iron, and was found in large quantities in various places within a mile or two from the meeting-house, where it still exists. The great want in the country of iron tools and iron ware, induced several enterprising gentlemen to attempt the establishment of a Forge. Among the principal of these were Thomas Dexter and Robert Bridges. Mr. Dexter was a very active and energetic man, foremost in every public enterprise; and his greatest fault appears to have consisted in speaking somewhat too freely of the government, because they did not keep up with his plans of improvement. The character of Hon. Robert Bridges has been given by Johnson, in a few words; 'he was endued with able parts, and forward to improve them to the glory of God and his people's good.'

This year, Mr. Bridges took some specimens of the Iron ore from the mines in Saugus, and went to London, where he succeeded in forming a company, called the 'Company of Undertakers for the Iron Works,' consisting of the following wealthy and enterprising gentlemen.

Lionel Copley, Esquire, of York County, England.

Nicholas Bond, Esquire, of Westminster.

Thomas Pury, Esquire, of Westminster.

John Becx, London, Merchant.

William Beauchamp, London, Merchant.

Thomas Foley, London, Gentleman.

William Greenhill, Stepney, Middlesex County.

Thomas Weld, Minister, Gateshead, Durham County.

John Pococke, Merchant Tailor, London.



William Becke, Merchant Tailor, London.

William Hicocke, London, Citizen.

This company advanced one thousand pounds for commencing the work. Land was purchased of Thomas Hudson, and a Foundry erected on the western bank of Saugus river, where large heaps of scoria are still to be seen. John Winthrop, Jr., also engaged in the enterprise; and Mr. Endecott, of Salem, in a letter to Governor Winthrop, dated December 1, says, 'I want much to hear from your son's iron and steel.' The village at the Iron Works was called Hammersmith, from some of the principal workmen who came from a place of that name in England. This Iron Foundry at Lynn, was the first which was established in America.

Several persons came from England this year to engage in the Iron Works, either as superintendents or workmen, among whom were the following:

Richard Leader was General Agent for the Company of the Undertakers for the Iron Works, and is mentioned as a man of superior ability.

Henry Leonard was a workman at the Iron Foundry. The family of the Leonards have been extensively engaged in the manufacture of Iron, in various places, ever since their ancestor assisted to make the first castings at Lynn.

Henry Styche lived at the Iron Works. It appears by a deposition given by him, at the Salem Court, in 1653, that he was then 103 years of age.

Arsbell Anderson came from Scotland, and was a workman at the Iron Foundry. He died in 1661.

MacCallum More Downing came from Scotland. He worked at the Forge, and died in 1683.

Joseph Jenks came from Hammersmith in England. He was a Machinist at the Iron Foundry, and was a man of great genius, of which abundant evidence will be found in this history. He made the dies for coining the first money, built the first fire-engine, and took out several patents for improvements in mills and iron tools. He is said to have been descended from an ancient family in Wales. He came over a widower, leaving two sons in England, and married Elizabeth —, by whom he had one son and two daughters. He died in March, 1683, and his wife Elizabeth died in July, 1679. His children were, 1. Joseph, born in England, resided some time in Lynn, where he married Esther, daughter of William Ballard. He then removed to Pawtucket, where he built a forge, which was destroyed in the Wampanoag war in 1675. In 1681, he was an Assistant in the government of Rhode Island; he had a son, Joseph Jenks, who was governor of that State from 1727 to 1732. 2. George, went to Virginia. 3. Sara, married John Chilson. 4. Samuel, like

his father, was a workman in Iron, and married Elizabeth Darling. 5. Deborah. 6. John, married Sarah Merriam. 7. Daniel, went to Rhode Island, where he built several mills. The descendants of Joseph Jenks, throughout New England, are numerous, and several of them have been eminent; among whom is the Rev. William Jenks, D. D., of Boston.

Joseph Jenks, the founder of this family, deserves to be held in perpetual remembrance in American History, as being the first founder 'who worked in Brass and Iron' on the western continent. By his hands the first models were made, and the first castings taken of many domestic implements and iron tools. The first article said to have been cast, was a small iron pot, capable of containing about one quart. Thomas Hudson, of the same family with the celebrated Hendric Hudson, and the lineal ancestor of my mother, was the first proprietor of the lands on Saugus River, where the Iron Foundry stood. When the forge was established, he procured the first casting, which was this famous old iron pot, which he preserved as a curiosity. It has been handed down in the family ever since, and is now in the possession of my mother, who, I suppose, would not exchange it for a silver one.

**1643.** Much difficulty was occasioned for several years, by an opinion which some of the people entertained, that the baptism of infants was sinful. Mr. William Witter was presented at the Salem Court for his conduct in this respect, and on the twenty-eighth of February, the following record was made: 'William Witter—Now comeing in, answered humbly, and confessed his Ignorance, and his willingness to see Light, and, (upon Mr. Norris our Elder his speech,) seemed to be staggered, Inasmuch as that he came in court meltinglie. Sentence—Have called our ordenonce of God, a badge of the whore on some Lecture day, the next 5th day being a public fast. To acknowledge his falt, And to ask Mr. Cobbett forgiveness, in saying he spok against his conscience. And enjoined to be heare next court att Salem.'

At the same court, Roger Scott was presented, 'for common sleeping at the public exercise upon the Lord's day, and for striking him that waked him.' In December following, not having amended his conduct, he was sentenced by the court, 'to be severely whipped.' It was the custom at this time, during the public service, for a person to go about the meeting to wake the sleepers. He bore a long wand, on one end of which was a ball, and on the other a fox tail. When he observed the men asleep, he rapped them on the head with the knob; and roused the slumbering sensibilities of the ladies by drawing the brush lightly across their faces.

On Sunday morning, March 5, there was an earthquake.



A controversy was in agitation respecting the right of the assistants to a negative vote upon the resolves of the representatives. Mr. Cobbet wrote a treatise, in which he advocated the right of the assistants, and the question was finally decided in their favor.

On the fifth of June, says Governor Winthrop, 'there arose a sudden gust at NW. so violent for half an hour as it blew down multitudes of trees. It lifted up their meeting-house at Newbury, the people being in it. It darkened the air with dust, yet through God's great mercy it did no hurt, but only killed one Indian. It was straight between Linne and Hampton.'

In June, Mr. Edward Tomlins was appointed by the court a commissioner to treat with the Indians. He was also appointed Clerk of the Writs, instead of Mr. Richard Sadler.

Mr. Joseph Armitage, who kept the Tavern on the west of Saugus River, having become involved in pecuniary difficulty, in consequence of certain speculations beyond his means, his wife Jane presented a petition to the General Court, in June, that they would 'reconfirm the custody of the said ordinary to the petitioner.' It was signed by the two ministers, and by thirty-two other principal inhabitants, and was granted on the twenty-sixth of October. 'Joseph Armitage is allowed to keep the ordinary, but not to draw wine.'

It was probably on account of this refusal of the court, to allow Mr. Armitage to sell spirit, that he procured the warrant mentioned in the Salem Court files, December 27th, when Joseph Armitage was presented, 'for procuring a warrant for seaventy persons to appeare forthwithe before the Governor, which we conceave may be of dangerous consequence.'

**1644.** The Company of Undertakers for the Iron Works, on the seventh of March, laid before the court ten propositions for the advancement of their designs; the most important of which were granted. They were allowed permission to make use of six places, three miles square in each place, wherever they might choose, without interfering with previous grants. Their privileges were to continue twenty-one years; with exemption of themselves, their workmen, and stock, from all public taxes, for ten years.

On the twentieth of May, the court allowed the town 'thirty sacre shot' for their two great guns, of which Captain Robert Bridges had the care. At the same court, the name of Lynn Village was altered to Reading.

At the Quarterly Court, on the twenty-seventh of August, the following persons were presented. 'Wm. Hewes and John his son, for deriding such as Sing in the Congregation, teaming them fooles; also William Hewes for saying Mr. Whiting

preaches confusedly; also John Hewes for charging Mr. Cobbitt with falshood in his doctrine. Wm. Hewes, and John his son, shall pay 50s. a peece for a fine, and that it be Injoynd they shall make an humble confession at Lynn, at a publick meeting, which according to it the Court will consider of their fines.'

On the thirteenth of November, the Iron Company presented to the court seven more propositions; in reply to which, the court, in addition to their former grants, allowed them three years 'for the perfecting of their worke, and furnishing of the country with all sorts of barr iron.' They gave any of the inhabitants liberty to share in the work, by 'bringing in within one year, no less than 100£ a person, with allowance to the adventurers, &c., for 1000£ already disbursed;' if they would complete the finery and forge, as well as the furnace, which 'is already set up.' They gave them liberty, in all waste places, 'to make use of all yron ston, or yron oare,' to cut wood, and to make ponds and highways. They likewise granted them immunities, civil and religious, equal with any in the jurisdiction; and recommended them to provide religious instruction for the families of their workmen, who were to be free from all watchings against the Indians, and from all trainings.

**1645.** The establishment of the Iron Foundry was highly approved by the Court, who passed the following order on the fourteenth of May.

'Whereas it is now found by sufficient purpose that the iron work is very successful, both in the richness of the ore and the goodness of the iron, and like to be of great benefit to the whole country, especially if the inhabitants here should be interested therein, in some good proportion, one half at the least, and whereas the time limited for adventurers to come in will be expired in the ninth month next: This Court taking the same into serious consideration, and being careful that such an opportunity, for so great advantage to the Commonwealth might not be let slip: have taken order, that speedy notice thereof should be given to every town within this jurisdiction, expecting that all such persons, as are of sufficient ability, and intend their own benefit, with the common good will forthwith appear to come in to share in the work, according to their abilities, and for their better instruction, and direction herein, they are hereby to understand that there is already disbursed between £1200, and £1500, with which the furnace is built, with that which belongeth to it, and good quantity of mine, coal and wood provided, and some ons of sow iron cast, and some other things, in readiness, for the forge, &c., they are also to know that no adventurer is to put in less than £100: but divers may join together to make up that sum: so it come all under one name, there will be need of some



£1500 to finish the forge, &c., which will be accepted in money, beaver, wheat, coals, or any such commodities, as will satisfy the workmen, and these are to be paid in to Mr. Henry Webb, of Boston, by such direction as they may receive from the undertakers, Mr. John Winthrop, jun., major Sedgwick, Mr. Henry Webb aforesaid, and Mr. Joshua Hewes; the new adventurers are also to know, that they must bear their part, in such loss, as is befallen the first stock, by forbearance, or otherwise, to the time of the new adventurers paying in their adventures, and all such, as will adventure are desired to hasten their resolutions that the work may go on speedily.'

A question has arisen, whether the first forge might not have been established at Braintree. It certainly was not. The first purchase of land for the iron works at Braintree, which has been discovered, was not till some months after this time, namely, on the twenty-ninth of September, 1645, when George Ruggles sold Richard Leader twenty acres. The grant of '2860 acres,' made for the iron works 'to be set up' at Braintree, was not laid out till the eleventh of January, 1648. It is certain that an Iron Foundry was in successful operation at Lynn, as early as 1643, and as mention is only made by the court of one forge, it follows of course that it must have been this. In 1691, iron ore, called 'Rock mine,' was taken from the ledges at Nahant for the forge at Braintree.

The court ordered, that youth, from ten to sixteen years of age, should be exercised, on training days, in the use of small guns, half pikes, and bows and arrows. They also ordered, that any person who should make or publish a false report, should be fined ten shillings, or set in the stocks.

Mr. Edward Burcham was chosen 'Clarke of the Writts, and to record deaths, births, and marriages for the Towne.'

'Thomas Layton hath Liberty granted him by the house of deputies, to drawe wine for the town for one yeare.'

'Thomas Layghton, Edward Burcham, and Thomas Puttnam are chosen by the house of deputies to end small controversies.'

The number of inhabitants having been considerably diminished by the removal of so many families to Reading, Long Island, and other places, a petition was presented to the court for an abatement of taxes. The original paper, very much torn and trampled by the mob, which dilapidated Governor Hutchinson's house and papers in 1765, is still in existence. It commences with 'humbly shewing, that whereas the overruling Providence of God hath much weakened our hands, which yet were never of like strength with others about us, to bear such a share in the Publique disbursements and debts of the country as formerly, we therefore make bold truly to Informe this honoured Court of our Infeebled estate with which we have more

Immediate cause to be best acquainted. Those few able persons which were with and of us, Its not unknowne how many of them have deserted us; as my lady Moody, whose share, in a former rate of this town, at 80£. was above 4 £. and her estate, left now in a life rate, pays not 1 £. 10 s. Mr. Howel 6 £. Mr. Willis 5 £. Mr. Keayne 2 £. Mr. Edward Tomlins neare 3 £. John Poole 1 £ 15s. Mr. Sadler 1 £. 10s. Nic Browne as much. Lieftenant Walker 1£. Wm. Halsey 1£. John Cowper 1£. Mr. Wade 12s. James Hubbard 12s. Wm. Cowdrey, Wm. Blott, Wm. Martin, Thomas Marshall, Zachary ffitch, 10s. each of them, besides above 20 more whose share in such a rate was; some 8, some 7, &c. The petitioners state, that between 'two and three hundred acres of the deserted farms is soe overrun with Sorrel that it is scarce quittinge cost to such whose necessities is such as with us force them to improve the same. We would not envy our neighbor townes, which are of the risinge hand by tradinge or otherwayes, we rather wish theyr prosperity, but for ourselves, we are neither fitted for or inured to any such course of trade, but must awayte God's blessinge alone upon our Lands and Cattel; our Earnest Request therefore is, that this honoured Court, in which is the Confluence of the wisdom, fidelity, and Equity of the Country, would please seriously to weigh the premises touching our present estate, and proportion out such share of Publique Charges, according not to our supposed but real Abilities which the Lord hath left us, and we shall cheerfully put too our shoulders and continue our joynt prayers for you and yours. Resting yours to serve and obey in the Lord.' This petition was signed by Thomas Putnam, Francis Lightfoot, Henry Collins, William Longley, and Thomas Loughton, Selectmen. The court, in their reply say, 'We conceive the estate of lin should be considered;' and when they lay the tax, which was £616,15, they required only £25 from Lynn.

Some of the inhabitants of Lynn and Salem petitioned the court for liberty to form an independent company. The court gave permission, and a band was formed, called 'The Military Company of Lynn and Salem.'

At the Quarterly Court, on the fifth of July, Samuel Bennet was presented, 'for saying, in a scornful manner, he neither cared for the Towne, nor any order the Towne could make.'

Captain Robert Bridges was appointed by the court, a commissioner to negotiate between Lord De La Tour and Monsieur D'Aulney, the governors of the French provinces on the north of New England. He was accompanied by Richard Walker and Thomas Marshall. For their 'good service' in this embassy, Captain Bridges was allowed ten pounds, Lieutenant Walker four pounds, and Sergeant Marshall forty shillings.

On the fourteenth of October, the Company of Undertakers for the Iron Works presented a petition to the court, which was



granted. As the answer of the court comprises some interesting information respecting the Iron Works, it is transcribed.

‘1. It was granted and by this court ordered, that the undertakers, their agents and assigns, are hereby granted the sole privilege and benefit of making Iron and managing of all Iron mines and works that now are, or shall be discovered and found out, or hereafter shall be in this jurisdiction, for the term of twenty-one years from the former grant: Provided that the said adventurers, their agents or assigns, do within three years from the former date, use their best endeavors to their utmost skill to perfect so many of the said works, that the inhabitants of this jurisdiction be furnished with bar iron of all sorts for their use, not exceeding twenty pounds per ton. Provided also, that it shall be in the liberty of any within this jurisdiction to be adventurers with the undertakers, that by the last day of this October they bring in their adventures, not less in one man’s name than fifty pounds, with allowance to the adventurers, for the stock of one thousand pounds, by them already disbursed.

‘2. The Court doth hereby further grant to the said undertakers, their agents and assigns, in all places of waste and lands not appropriated to any town or person, that the said undertakers, their agents or assigns, at all times during the said term of twenty-one years, shall and may freely and at their own discretion have and take, all manner of wood and timber, to be converted into coals, or any other uses for the service of the undertakers, as also all manner of earth, stones, turf, clay, and other materials for buildings and reparation of their works, forges, mills, or houses built, or to be built, or for making or moulding any manner of guns, pots, and all other cast-iron ware, and for converting wood into charcoal, and also to get, dig, and carry away of all manner of stone iron ore and wood of all sorts; and any other material, or things of use for their works, and it is hereby also granted to the said undertakers, their agents, or assigns, that they shall have free liberty to make all convenient ways and passages, as also all manner of dams, watercourses, sluices, ponds for water, in all waste grounds, or other conveyances, to, from and for the service of the said works built or to be built not appropriated to any town or person, during such time as the said works shall continue, Provided, if by any pond, sluice, dam, or any other work (though in land appropriated) they should spoil, or any ways prejudice the land appropriated to any town or person the said undertakers shall make due and just satisfaction.

‘3. Also the Court doth hereby further grant to the said adventurers, their agents, or assigns, in all the grounds that are or shall be appropriated, that the said adventurers, their agents or assigns, shall have free liberty at all times during the term to dig, get, carry away all manner of stone, or iron ore, and to

make and use all convenient ways and sluices, water-courses, pools, dams, ponds for water, and other conveniences, to, from, and for the service of the said works through all the said grounds, that are or hereafter shall be appropriated, (except houses, orchards, not exceeding three acres and yards) giving such due and full recompense for the same to the owners thereof, for the time being, as three indifferent men shall adjudge, whereof one to be appointed by the said court at the next general meeting after the undertakers, their agents or assigns, shall make or use any of the said ways, or water-courses, or other particulars therein mentioned for the services aforesaid, and one other by the owner of the land for the time being, and the third by the undertakers or adventurers.

‘4. The Court hereby do further grant unto the said adventurers and to their heirs and assigns forever, so much land now or hereafter to be in this jurisdiction, as aforesaid, as shall contain in six places three miles square in each place, or so much in quantity as containeth three miles square not exceeding four miles in length to be set out in such places and parcels, as the said undertakers or their agents shall make choice of, not being already appropriated as aforesaid, upon which said land the said adventurers shall have free liberty and hereby do undertake that within the said term of [twenty-one] years, to search, set out and find convenient places within the said compass of land; for the building and setting up of six forges, or furnaces, and not bloomeries only, or so many more as they shall have occasion for, for the making of iron as aforesaid, which they shall, (the iron stone and other materials appearing proper and fit for the making of iron as aforesaid,) build and set up within the term aforesaid, Provided that the Court may grant a plantation in any place where the court doth think meet, the undertakers or their agents there residing having first notice thereof, and not making choice of the same for part of the land to be set out and granted to them, for the design of planting the said iron works and making iron as aforesaid.

‘5. And it is further granted and ordered that what quantity of iron of all sorts and qualities the said adventurers, their agents or assigns, shall make more than the inhabitants shall have need or use of for their service to be bought and paid for by the said inhabitants as aforesaid, they shall have free liberty to transport the same by shipping to other ports or places of the world, and to make sale thereof, in what way and place the said adventurers shall please, for their best advantage, Provided they sell it not to any person or state in actual hostility with us.

‘6. It is further granted and ordered that the said undertakers and agents, and servants, shall, from the date of their presents, have and enjoy all liberties and immunities whatsoever, present or to come, equal with any in this jurisdiction, according to the



laws and orders thereof, for the time being, and according to the rights and privileges of the churches.

'7. It is also granted that the undertakers and adventurers, together with their agents, servants, and assigns, shall be and are hereby free from all taxes, assessments, contributions, and other public charges whatsoever, for so much of their stock or goods as shall be employed in and about the said iron works for and during the term of [twenty-one] years yet to come from the date of their presents.

'8. It is also hereby further granted and ordered that all such clerks and workmen as miners, founders, finers, hammer-men, and colliers, necessarily employed, or to be employed in and about the said works, built or to be built, for any the services thereof, shall from time to time during the term of [twenty-one] years, be and hereby are absolutely freed and discharged of and from all ordinary trainings, watchings, etc., but that every person at all times be furnished with arms, powder, shot, etc., according to order of court.

'9. Lastly. It is ordered by the Court, that in all places where any iron work is set up, remote from a church or congregation, unto which they cannot conveniently come, that the undertakers shall provide some good means whereby their families may be instructed in the knowledge of God, by such as the court or standing council shall approve of.'

On the twenty-second of December, 'Thomas Hudson' of Linne, granted unto Thos. Hutchinson of Linne, sixty acres of ground amongst the furnaces, adjoining to Goodman Townsend's farme.'

A book was written this year, by Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich, which attracted much attention. It is entitled 'The Simple Cobler of Aggawam, willing to help mend his Native Country, lamentably tattered, both in Upper Leather and Sole, with all the honest Stitches he can take.' It abounds in pungent wit and satire, interspersed with much good sense. He is particularly severe on those who cause innovations in religion, and deny the rite of infant baptism. He says, 'The removing of some one iota in scripture, may draw out all the life, and traverse all the truths of the Bible. To authorize an untruth by a toleration of state, is to build a scone against the walls of heaven, to batter God out of his chair!' His book concludes with the following stanza:

' And farewell, Simple World,  
If thou 'lt thy cranium mend,  
There is my Last and Awl,  
And a Shoemaker's End!'

**1646.** The proprietors of the Iron Works, in the beginning of this year, made an agreement with Thomas Dexter, for opening a new water-course, and enlarging the pond. They purchased 'all that parcell of land neere adjacent to the Grantor's house, which shall necessarily be overflowed by reason of a pond of water, there included, to be stopped to the heighth agreed on betwixt them; and sufficient for a water-course intended to be erected, together with the land lying betweene the ould water-course and the new one, And also five acres and halfe in the cornfield next the Grantor's house,' for which they allowed £40. They agreed to make a fence 'toward Captain Bridge's house,' with 'a sufficient cart bridge over the said water-course,' and 'to allow sufficient water in the ould river for the Alewives to come to the wyres before the Grantor's house.' This extension of the pond caused it to overflow three acres of land belonging to Mr. Adam Hawkes. The whole amount purchased was forty-five acres.

Thomas Dexter's house stood at some distance above the Iron Works on the left. The present road to the northward runs through the bed of the old pond. This year the dam was moved further up the river, and a little canal was dug from the pond, and brought along on the high ground, until it reached the Foundry. This canal was the 'new water course' mentioned in the preceding agreement.

On the eighteenth of February, Mr. William Witter was presented at the Quarterly Court, 'ffor saying that they who stayed while a Childe is baptized, doe worshipp the dyvill; also Henry Collens and Mathew West, deling with him about the former speeche, he speaks to them after this manner, That they who stayed at the baptising of a Childe, did take the name of the Father, Sonn, and holly ghost in vain and broke the Saboth, and cenfesseth and justifieth his former speech. Sentence of Court is, an Iniunction next Lord's day being faire, that he make a publique confession to Satisfaction, in the open congregation at Lyn, or else to answer it at the next General Court. And concerning his opinion, the court hath yet patience toward him, till they see if he be obstinate, and only admonish him.'

By permission of the court, Mr. Leader purchased some of the country's Gunnes,' to melt over at the Iron Foundry.

On the tenth of June, Mr. Joseph Jenks presented a petition that the Court would patronise his improvements in mills, and the manufacture of sythes. 'In Answer to a peticon of Joseph Jencks for liberty to make experience of his abillities and Inventions for the making of engines for mills, to goe with water, for the more speedy despatch of worke than formerly, and mills for the making of sithes and other edge tooles, with a new Invented



sawemill, that things may be afforded cheaper than formerly, and that for fourteen yeeres without disturbance by any other's setting up the like Invention, that so his study and costs may not be in vayne or lost, this peticon was graunted, so as power is still left to restrayne the exportation of such manufactures, and to moderate the prizes thereof, if occacon so require.'

Mr. Daniel King complained to the Court that his goods had been taken, to the amount of fifty shillings, by 'the captain of ye trayned band of Lin, for supposed neglect of trayning, he being lame, and willing to find a sufficient man.' The court ordered him to pay the fifty shillings for the past, and ten shillings annually for the future.

Much damage was done to the corn, wheat, and barley, this summer, by a species of large black caterpillar.

On the fourth of August, Mr. Thomas Dexter was presented at the Quarterly Court 'for a common sleeper,' in meetings for public worship, and fined.

The proprietors of the Iron Works addressed a letter to the court in May, which was answered in September. In their reply, the court say, 'We acknowledge with you that such a staple comodity as Iron is a great meanes to enrich the place where it is, both by furnishing this place with that comodity at reasonable rates, and by bringing in other necessary comodities in exchange of Iron exported, but as we use to say, if a man lives where an axe is worth but 12d., yet it is never the cheaper to him who cannot get 12d. to buy one. So if your Iron may not be had heere without ready mony what advantage will that be to us if wee have no money to purchase it. Itt is true some men have here Spanish mony sometimes, but little comes to our Smiths hands, especially those of inland tounes. What monyes our Smithes cann gett you may be sure to have it before any other; if we must want iron so often as our mony failes, you may easily Judge if it were not better for us to Procure it from other places by our corne and pipe staves, &c., then to depend on the comming in of mony which is never so plentifull as to supply for the occacon.'

In October, Captain Robert Bridges was chosen Speaker of the House of Representatives.

On the night of the fourth of November, began 'a most dreadful tempest at northeast, with wind and rain.' The roof of Lady Moody's house at Salem was blown off. Winthrop.

At the court, in this month, 'on the motion of the deputies of the towne of Linne; It is ordered that there shal be once a weeke a market kept there on every third day of the weeke, being their lecture day.'

**1647.** On the twentieth of January, Richard Leader sold to Joseph Jenks, the privilege to build a forge at the Iron Works, for the manufacture of sythes.

On the twenty-sixth of May, Captain Robert Bridges was chosen an Assistant.

In June, an epidemic sickness prevailed through the whole country, supposed to have been the influenza.

In October, the court ordered, that every town containing fifty families, should have a school for reading and writing; and that all towns containing one hundred families, should maintain a grammar school.

✓ An order was passed, that if any young man should address a young woman, without the consent of her parents, or in their absence, of the county court, he should be fined five pounds.

The court fixed the prices of grain to be received for taxes; Indian corn at 3s., rye and peas at 3s. 6d., barley at 4s., and wheat at 4s. 6d. a bushel.

Among the presentments at the Quarterly Court, was the following. December 14. 'The town of Lynn, for want of a staff for the constable.'

December 29. 'John Turner, living at the Iron Workes at Lin, being convicted before the court for stabbing Sara Turner, his daughter-in-law — the sentence of court is, that he shall be severely whipped.'

**1648.** Mr. Edmund Ingalls, the first white inhabitant of Lynn, was drowned, in March, in crossing Saugus River. Soon after, 'Robert Ingalls, with the rest of his brethren and sisters, being eight in number,' petitioned the General Court, 'That whereas their Father hath been deprived of life by the insufficiency of Lynn Bridge, that according to the law in such cases, there shall be an hundred pounds forfeited to the next heir.' This was granted. It was in conformity with an old British law, established by Howell the Good, King of Wales, by which the value of each person's life was nominally fixed, and so much money paid, in case of his being killed.

On the twenty-third of March, the court allowed the town twenty pounds, toward repairing the 'great bridge' over Saugus river. On the eighteenth of October, thirty shillings were granted annually for the same purpose.

On the twenty-seventh of April, Captain Robert Bridge's house, near the Iron Works, was burnt. Winthrop.

✓ In June, Margaret Jones, of Charlestown, was executed at Boston, for a witch. This was the first execution for this offence in New England, and should have been the last.

In a letter to his son, dated August 4, Mr. Winthrop remarks:



'The iron work goeth on with more hope. It yields now about 7 tons per week, but it is most out of that brown earth which lies under the bog mine. They tried another mine, and after 24 hours they had a sum of about 500, which when they brake, they conceived to be a 5th part silver. There is a grave man of good fashion come now over to see how things stand here. He is one who hath been exercised in iron works.' In another letter, September 30, he says, 'The furnace runs 8 tons per week, and their bar iron is as good as Spanish. The adventurers in England sent over one Mr. Dawes to oversee Mr. Leader, but he is far short of Mr. Leader. They could not agree, so he is returned by Teneriffe.'

**1649.** The Rev. Thomas Cobbet preached the Election Sermon before the court, on the third of May.

On the tenth, the Governor and Assistants, among whom was Captain Robert Bridges, signed a protestation against the prevailing custom of wearing long hair, 'after the manner of ruffians and barbarous Indians.'

On the seventh of September, Nicholas Pinion was presented at the Quarterly court, for swearing. 'The deposition of Quinten Pray. This deponent saith, that meetinge with Nicholas Pinion the last Lord's day, cominge out of his corne, hee heard the said Pinion sware all his pumpkins were turned to squashes.' The court, as a comment upon Mr. Johnson's text, (p. 33, old edition,) 'let no man make a jest at pumpkins,' fined him.

On the eleventh, Matthew Stanley was tried for winning the affections of John Tarbox's daughter, without the consent of her parents. He was fined £5, with 2s. 6d. fees. The parents of the young woman were allowed six shillings for their attendance three days.

**1650.** In the preceding pages, I have given the names of every man whom I found in Lynn before the year 1650, excepting those who staid but a short time, and left to settle in other places. I shall here give a list of a few more names, which I find before the year 1690, and after that time they become too numerous to be continued.

Samuel Appleton, Jr., was here from 1677 to 1688, in connexion with the Iron Works, which he owned at that time. He was a descendant of John Appulton, who died at Great Waldingford, in 1436. The following record of his family is from the old volume of Lynn Records, which was discovered by me, after it had been lost for many years. 'Mr. Samuell Apleton, Junior, and Mis Elizabeth Whittingham, the Daughter of Mr. William Whittingham, Marchant, in Boston, was married the 19th of June, 1682. Mary, the Daughter of Mr. Samuell Appleton

and of Elizabeth his wiffe, was born into this world the 30 of March, 1683. Hannah ther Daughter was born the first of November, 1684. Elizabeth their daughter was Born the 10th of July, 1687.' He removed to Boston in 1688; and was the ancestor of the very respectable family of Appletons in that city.

Thomas Berry married Elizabeth, and had two sons; Thomas, born March 14, 1695; and Samuel, born June 25, 1697. His descendants remain.

John Blaney married Elizabeth Purchis in November, 1678. He had a son Joseph, whose descendants live at Swampscot.

Samuel Bly married Lois Ivory, December 19, 1678, and died December 31, 1693. He had two sons, Theophilus and Samuel.

Thomas Brewer married Elizabeth Graves, December 4, 1682, and had six children; Mary, Rebecca, Mary, Crispus, Thomas, and John.

William Barber married Elizabeth Kirk, May 4, 1673. He had two children; Elizabeth, born November 1, 1673; William, born January 8, 1674.

John Henry Burchsted, a native of Silesia, married Mary, widow of Nathaniel Kertland, April 24, 1690. Henry, his son, was born October 3, 1690. They were both eminent physicians, and lived on the hill in front of High Rock, where Dr. Richard Haseltine's house stands. Dr. John Henry Burchsted died September 20, 1721, aged 64 years. The following is his epitaph:

Silesia to New England sent this man,  
To do their all that any healer can,  
But he who conquered all diseases must  
Find one who throws him down into the dust.  
A chemist near to an adeptist come,  
Leaves here, thrown by, his caput mortuum.  
Reader, physicians die as others do;  
Prepare, for thou to this art hastening too.

Thomas Beal had two sons. William married widow Mary Hart, March 5, 1684. Samuel married Patience Lovell, March 28, 1682.

Thomas Burrage married Elizabeth, 1687, and had six children; Elizabeth, John, Thomas, Mary, Bethiah, and Ruth.

John Coats and Mary Witherdin, were married April 14, 1681, and had two children, Mary and John.

Philip Gifford married Mary Davis, June 30, 1684. He had two children, Philip and Mary.

Zaccheus Gould had a son Daniel, born about 1650, who married Elizabeth. She died August 3, 1691.

John Gowing married Joanna, 1682, and had seven children; John, Thomas, Elizabeth, Samuel, Joanna, Lois, and Timothy.

Samuel Hart married Mary Witteridge, January 29, 1673, and had two children; John and William.



Thomas Ivory had two sons, Thomas and John. He died July 18, 1690.

Daniel King married widow Elizabeth Corwen of Salem. He died May 27, 1672. His widow, Elizabeth, died February 26, 1677. He lived at Swampscot, and bought a large portion of Mr. Humfrey's farm. He had two sons; Daniel married Tabitha Walker, March 11, 1662. Ralph married Elizabeth Walker, March 2, 1663.

Thomas Loughton married Sarah —, and had two sons, 1. Thomas, who married Sarah Rednap, December 28, 1670; and 2. Samuel, who married Sarah Graves, February 14, 1680.

John Lyscom married Abigail —, and had a son, Samuel; born September 16, 1693.

Ezekiel Needham married Sarah King, October 27, 1669, and had five children; Edmund, Sarah, Ezekiel, Daniel, and Ralph.

Daniel Needham married Ruth —, 1673, and had five children; Elizabeth, Edmund, Daniel, Ruth and Mary.

Thomas Norwood and Mary Brown were married August 24, 1685, and had six children; Francis, Ebenezer, Mary, Thomas, Mary, and Jonathan.

George Oaks married Jennet —, and had five children; John, born July 31, 1664, Mary, Richard, Sarah, Elizabeth and George.

John Perkins and Anna Hutchinson were married August 29, 1695, and had five children; Anna, John, Elizabeth, Mary, and William.

John Person married Tabitha —, and had eleven children; James, born November 28, 1680, Tabitha, John, Rebecca, Kendall, Susanna, Mary, Thomas, Ebenezer, Sarah, and Abigail.

Samuel Penfield married Mary Lewis, November 30, 1675, and had two children; Samuel and Mary.

John Phillips married Hannah —, and had two children; John, born December 3, 1689; Hannah, born June 6, 1694. He died September 29, 1694. He lived at Swampscot.

William Robinson had three sons; William, born October 7, 1683, Aquila, and John.

Henry Silsbe had three sons; Jonathan married Bathia Marsh, January 1, 1673; Samuel married Mary Bistow, July 4, 1676; Henry married Grace Eaton, November 18, 1680.

Henry Stacy married Hannah, and had five children; William, born January 3, 1674; Henry, born April 1, 1677; Sarah, born January 3, 1678; Ebenezer, born January 4, 1680; John, born October 30, 1682.

Joshua Wait and Elizabeth Mansfield were married January 10, 1675, and had two children, Moses and Mary.

Abraham Wellman married Elizabeth —, and had a son born, May 3, 1676.

Domingo Wight, a black man, had three children ; Mary, born August 31, 1675; Joseph, born May 23, 1678; Hannah, born September 5, 1679.

**1651.** Mr. Richard Leader, the agent for the Iron Works, was arraigned by the Court, on the seventh of May, for reproaching Governor Endecott, the court, and the church at Lynn. In their first excitement, the court fined him two hundred pounds, which were afterward reduced to fifty. Mr. Leader made an acknowledgment, and the fine was finally remitted. After this, Mr. John Gifford appears as agent. He married the widow Margaret Temple, and had a son Philip.

On taking the management of the Iron Works, Mr. Gifford raised the dam, which caused the water to overflow six acres of 'plowland' belonging to Mr. Adam Hawkes. For this, on the twentieth of June, an agreement was made, in which Mr. Hawkes was allowed £8 for damages.

On Sunday, the twentieth of July, three men of the Baptist persuasion, whose names were John Clarke, John Crandall, and Obadiah Holmes, came from Newport, and went to the house of William Witter, at Swampscot, where Mr. Clark preached, administered the sacrament, and re-baptized Mr. Witter. This being reported to the authorities, two constables went down to Swampscot to apprehend them as disturbers of the peace. They carried a warrant, which had been granted by Hon. Robert Bridges. 'By virtue hereof, you are required to go to the house of William Witter, and so to search from house to house for certain erroneous persons, being strangers, and them to apprehend, and in safe custody to keep, and tomorrow morning at 8 o'clock, to bring before me.' Mr. Clark says, 'while I was yet speaking, there comes into the house where we were, two constables, who with their clamorous tongues make an interruption, and more uncivilly disturbed us than the pursuivants of the old English bishops were wont to do.' In the afternoon, they were taken to Mr. Whiting's meeting, where they refused to uncover their heads. Mr. Bridges ordered a constable to take off their hats, when one of them attempted to speak, but was prevented.

At the close of the meeting, one of them made some remarks, after which they were taken to the Anchor tavern, and guarded through the night. In the morning, they were sent to Boston and imprisoned. On the thirty-first, the Court of Assistants sentenced Mr. Holmes to pay a fine of thirty pounds, Mr. Clark of twenty, and Mr. Crandall of five. The fines of Clark and Crandall were paid; but Mr. Holmes refused to pay his, or suffer it to be paid, and was retained in prison till September, when he was publicly whipped. When brought to the place of execution, he requested liberty to speak to the people, but the presid-



ing officer, one *Flint*, rightly named, refused, and ordered him to be stripped. His friends brought some wine, which they requested him to drink, but he declined it, lest the spectators should attribute his fortitude to drink. The whip was made of three cords, and the executioner spat three times in his own hands, that he might not fail to honor justice. In a manuscript left by Governor Joseph Jenks, it is written that 'Mr. Holmes was whipped 30 stripes, and in such an unmerciful manner, that for many days, if not some weeks, he could not take rest, but as he lay upon his knees and elbows, not being able to suffer any part of the body to touch the bed.' As the man began to lay on the stripes, Holmes said 'though my flesh should fail, yet my God will not fail.' He then prayed, 'Lord lay not this sin to their charge.' When he was released, two spectators, John Shaw and John Hasel, went up and took hold of his hand to sympathize with him, for which they were fined forty shillings each. Such is the bitterness of religious persecution. Dr. John Clark was one of the most respectable physicians in Rhode Island, and wrote a book entitled 'Ill News from New England,' with a full account of this persecution.

Mr. Witter was presented at the Salem court, on the twenty-seventh of November, for neglecting discourses and being re-baptized.

On the fourteenth of October, the court made an order against 'the intolerable excess and bravery' of dress. They ordered that no person whose estate did not exceed £200 should wear any great boots, gold or silver lace or buttons, or silk hoods, ribbons or scarfs, under a penalty of ten shillings.

'In answer to a petition of George Indian at Lynn, This Court refers him to bring his action in some inferiour court, against any that ungenerously withhold any land from him.'

The following description of Lynn is from 'The Wonder Working Providence,' a work published this year, by Mr. Edward Johnson, of Woburn:

'Her scituation is neere to a River, whose strong freshet at breaking up of Winter filleth all her Bankes, and with a furious Torrent ventes itself into the Sea. This Towne is furnished with Mineralls of divers kinds, especially Iron and Lead, the forme of it is almost square, onely it takes two large a run into the Land-ward, (as most townes do.) It is filled with about one Hundred Houses for dwelling. There is also an Iron Mill in constant use, but as for Lead they have tried but little yet. Their meeting house being on a Levell Land undefended from the cold North west wind, and therefore made with steps descending into the earth; their streets are strait and comly, yet but thin of Houses; the people mostly inclining to Husbandry

have built many *Farmes Remote*. There *Cattell* exceedingly multiplied. Goates which were in great esteeme at their first comming, are now almost quite banished, and now Horse, kine and Sheep are most in request with them.'

In his remarks on manufactures, Mr. Johnson says, 'All other trades have fallen into their ranks and places, to their great advantage, especially Coopers and Shoemakers, who had either of them a corporation granted, inriching themselves by their trades very much. As for Tanners and Shoemakers it being naturalized into their occupations to have a higher reach in managing these manufactures then other men in New England are, having not changed their nature in this, between them both they have kept men to their stande hitherto, almost doubling the price of their commodities, according to the rate they were sold for in England, and yet the plenty of Leather is beyond what they had there, counting the number of the people, but the transportation of Boots and Shoes into forraign parts hath vented all however.'

The manufacture of shoes had not, at this time, become a principal business at Lynn. A few persons practised the employment regularly; but they traded with merchants at Boston, and did not export for themselves. The shoes which they made were principally of calf skin, for Morocco had not been introduced. Cloth was worn only by the most wealthy; and if a lady in the more common ranks of life obtained a pair of stuff shoes, to grace the nuptial ceremony, they were afterward laid aside, and carefully preserved through life, as something too delicate for ordinary use.

**1652.** Wenepoykin, the Lynn Sagamore, on the first of April, mortgaged 'all that Tract or Neck of Land commonly called Nahant,' to Nicholas Davison of Charlestown, 'for twenty pounds sterling dew many yeer.' The deed was signed with his mark, which has somewhat the form of a capital *H* in writing.

At the Quarterly Court, on the twenty-ninth of June, the following presentments were made. 'We present Ester, the wife of Joseph Jynkes Junior ffor wearing silver lace;' and 'Robert Burges for bad corne grinding.' Other persons were presented for wearing great boots and silk hoods.

Mr. Gifford this year increased the height of the dam at the Iron Works, by which ten acres of Mr. Hawkes's land were flowed; for which he agreed to give 16 loads of hay yearly, and 200 cords of wood. Afterward he agreed to give him £7, 'which ends all, except that 10s. is to be given him yearly.' By this agreement the water was to be so kept 'that it may not ascend the top of the upper floodgates in the pond higher than within a foot and a halfe of the top of the great Rock that lies in the middle of the pond before the gates.'



This year a mint was established at Boston for coining silver. The pieces had the word Massachusetts, with a pine tree on one side ; and the letters N. E. Anno 1652, and III. VI. or XII., denoting the number of pence, on the other. The dies for this coinage were made by Joseph Jenks, at the Iron Works.

**1653.** On the seventh of March, the boundary line between Lynn and Reading was established.

Samuel Bennet, carpenter, sold his corn mill to Thomas Wheeler, on the first of April, for £220.

This year, Mr. Thomas Savage, of Boston, attached the Iron Works, at Lynn, for the amount owed to him and Henry Webb. On the fourteenth of September a special court convened at Boston, for the trial. Mr. Savage obtained for himself £894 2s., and for Henry Webb £1351 6s. 9d. The total account of Mr. John Gifford, agent for the company, was £16,284 7s. 4d.

**1654.** The selectmen of Boston agreed with Mr. Joseph Jenks 'for an Ingeine to carry water in case of fire.' This was the first Fire Engine made in America.

In August, the court fixed the prices of grain ; Indian corn at 3s., rye and peas at 4s., and wheat and barley at 5s. a bushel.

At a town meeting, on the twenty-eighth of December, a grant was made to Mr. Edmund Farrington, allowing him the privilege to build a grist-mill, in Water Hill street, on condition that grain should be seasonably and faithfully ground ; otherwise the privilege was to revert to the town.

**1655.** This year Edmund Farrington built his mill on Water Hill. A pond was dug by hand, and the water brought from the old brook, by a little canal about half a mile in length. This mill was for many years the property of Benjamin Phillips, and in 1836 was purchased by Henry A. Breed, who dug out a new pond of more than an acre, for a reservoir.

Mr. John Gifford, agent of the Iron Company, having been imprisoned on account of the pecuniary affairs of that establishment, a petition was sent from London to the General Court, for his release. It was dated on the twenty-seventh of February, and signed by John Bex, William Greenhill, Thomas Foley, and Phebe Frost.

On the twenty-third of May, the General Court granted to Mr. Joseph Jenks a patent for an improved scythe, 'for the more speedy cutting of grasse, for seven years.' This improvement consisted in lengthening the blade, making it thinner, and welding a square bar on the back to strengthen it, as in the modern scythe. Before this the old English blade was short and thick, like a bush scythe.

**1656.** This year the Rev. Thomas Cobbet relinquished his connexion with the church at Lynn, and removed to Ipswich. He was born at Newbury, in England, 1608. Though his father was poor, he found means to gain admission at the University of Oxford, which he left during the great sickness in 1625, and became a pupil of Dr. Twiss, in his native town. He was afterward a minister of the established Church. He came to Lynn in 1637, and was welcomed by Mr. Whiting, with whom he had commenced a friendship in England. Mr. Mather says, 'they were almost every day together, and thought it a long day if they were not so; the one rarely travelling abroad without the other.' Mr. Cobbet preached at Lynn 19 years, and 29 at Ipswich. In 1666, he preached the election sermon, from II. Chronicles, 15, 2. He died on Thursday, 5th November, 1685, and was buried on the next Monday. At his funeral were expended, one barrel of wine, £6 8s.; two barrels of cider, 11s.; 82 pounds of sugar, £2 1s.; half a cord of wood, 4s.; four dozen pair of gloves, 'for men and women,' £5 4s.; with 'some spice and ginger for the cider.' It was the custom at funerals to treat all the company with cider, which in cold weather was heated and spiced. In the year 1711, the town of Lynn paid for 'half a barrel of cider for the widow Dispaw's funeral.' Wine was distributed when it could be afforded. Gloves were commonly given to the bearers and principal mourners, and by the more wealthy, rings were sometimes added. Mr. Cobbet appears to have been much esteemed. The following epitaph to his memory is one of the best of Mr. Mather's productions:

'Sta viator; thesaurus hic jacet;  
 THOMAS COBBETUS;  
 Cujus, nosti preces potentissimas, ac mores probatissimos,  
 Si es Nov-Anglus.  
 Mirare, si pietatem colas;  
 Sequere, si felicitatem optes.'

Stop, traveller, a treasure 's buried here;  
 Our Thomas Cobbet claims the tribute tear.  
 His prayers were powerful, his manners pure,  
 As thou, if of New England's sons, art sure.  
 If thou reverest piety, admire;  
 And imitate, if bliss be thy desire.

Mr. Cobbet possessed good learning and abilities, and wrote more books than any one of the early ministers of New England. Among his works, were the following:

1. A Treatise Asserting the Right of the Magistrates to a Negative Vote on the Resolves of the Representatives. 1643.
2. A Defence of Infant Baptism. 1645. This is said to have been an admirable summary of the principal arguments for and



against the subject, and an able exposition of the error of those who deny the validity of this important rite.

3. The Civil Magistrate's Power in Matters of Religion, Modestly Debated, with a Brief Answer to a certain slanderous pamphlet, called *Ill News from New England*; containing six pages of grievous dedication to Oliver Cromwell. 1653.

4. A Practical Discourse on Prayer. 1654. Mr. Mather remarks that, 'of all the books written by Mr. Cobbet, none deserves more to be read by the world, or to live till the general burning of the world, than that of Prayer.'

5. A Fruitful and Useful Discourse, touching the Honor due from Children to their Parents, and the Duty of Parents toward their Children. London, 1656.

6. A Treatise on Ecclesiastical Order and Discipline.

7. A Treatise on the First, Second, and Fifth Commandments.

The following beautiful picture of the enduring affection of a mother, is from the discourse on the duties of children.

'Despise not thy mother when she is old. When she was young, yea, when she was middle aged, thou prisedst, and respectedst, and did reverence and obey her; do it as well when she is old; hold on doing of it to the last. Age may wear and waste a mother's beauty, strength, parts, limbs, senses, and estate; but her relation of a mother is as the sun when he goeth forth in his might, for the ever of this life, that is, always in its meridian, and knoweth no evening. The person may be gray-headed, but her motherly relation is ever in its flourish. It may be autumn, yea winter, with the woman; but with the mother, as a mother, it is always spring.'

In descanting on the duties of children, he says; 'How tender were your parents of their dealings with men, to discharge a good conscience therein; of their very outward garb, what they ware, and of what fashion, and the like; but you their children regard not what you do, nor how you deal with others, nor what you wear, nor of what fashion, so the newest. Did ever your good father or grandfather wear such ruffianly hair upon their heads? or did your godly parents frisk from one new fangled fashion to another, as you do?'

The following anecdote is related by Mr. Mather. 'The ungrateful inhabitants of Lynn one year passed a town vote, that they could not allow their ministers above thirty pounds apiece that year, for their salary; and behold, the God who will not be mocked, immediately caused the town to lose three hundred pounds in that one specie of their cattle, by one disaster.' With his characteristic carelessness, Mr. Mather does not give any date to this fact.

Mr. Cobbet was much respected for his piety and the fervency of his prayers. One of the soldiers in Philip's war, whose name

was Luke Perkins, says, that when he was detached, in 1675, to go against the Indians, he went to request the prayers of Mr. Cobbet, who prayed that the company might be preserved, and they all returned in safety.

Some women of his neighborhood were one day attempting some trick of witchery, when their minister appeared. 'There,' said one of them 'we can do no more; there is old crooked back Cobbet a coming.'

For a considerable time, he was in the practice of walking from Ipswich to Boston, once in two weeks, to attend Mr. Norton's lecture, and to see his old friend, Mr. Whiting. He used to remark, that it was worth a journey to Boston, 'to hear one of Mr. Norton's good prayers.'

The parents of Mr. Cobbet came over some time after his arrival. The name of his wife was Elizabeth, and he had four sons; Samuel, who graduated in 1663; Thomas, John, and Eliezer.

Thomas Cobbet, Jr., who was a seaman at Portsmouth, was taken prisoner by the Indians in 1676, and carried to Penobscot. After an absence of several weeks, he was released by Madockawando, the sachem, who received a red coat as a present. On this subject, Mr. Cobbet thus writes, in his letter to Increase Mather: 'As to what you querie, whether there were not answers of prayer respecting my captured son, Surely I may truly say his wonderfull preservations in all that 9 weeks time after he was taken, and deliverance at the last, they will be put on that account as answers of prayer; for he was constantly pleaded for by Mr. Moody in his congregation for that end, from his being first taken (of which they first heard) till his redemption. So was he in like sort pleaded for by Mr. Shepard in his congregation at Charlestowne, and by my desire signified that way, by Mr. Philips, Mr. Higginson, Mr. Buckley, in theyr congregations, and I doubt not by yourself, Mr. Thatcher, Mr. Allin, in the 3 Boston churches, besides the prayers going constantly that way for him in the families and closets of godly ones, which heard of his captivity and hazard. He was constantly, as there was cause, remembered in our congregation for that end, and which I may not omit to mention: When Mr. Moody, by a post sent hither, sent me the first news of his taking by the Indians, and their further rage in those parts, calling out for further prayers — I presently caused one of our Deacons to call to my house that very day, as many godly men and theyr wives as were near us, to spend some hours in prayer about the same: about 30 met, several of them prayed, Capt. Lord was with them in it, and with me also, who began and ended that service; and having beg'd some amends of our wasted son Eliezer at home as a pledge of the desired mercies to our captived son abroad as granted, my



heart I must acknowledge to the Lord's praise, was sweetly guided in the course of that service, and I was even persuaded that the Lord had heard our prayers in that respect, and could not but express as much to some of our godly friends; so was one of our sisters, (as since she informed my wife,) as confidently persuaded that she should ere long see him returned, and that in comfortable plight, as if he were already come.' He says that his son Eliezer began to amend, 'insomuch that he who before could not walk up and down the town without staggering, could yet walk up that high hill (which you know of,) that is by Mr. Norton's, now our house.'

The great age to which many of the early settlers lived, is a subject worthy of notice. Boniface Burton died in 1669, at the great age of 113 years; an age to which no person in Lynn, since his time, has attained. Joseph Rednap lived till he was 110 years of age, in the full possession of his faculties. In the year 1635, when he was in his 80th year, we find a vote of the town granting him lands at Nahant, for the purpose of pursuing the trade of fishing; and he seems as enterprising at that age as if he were just beginning active life. Henry Styche was an efficient workman at the iron foundry in the year 1653, and was then 103 years of age. How many years longer he lived, history has not informed us. Christopher Hussey was pursuing his active and useful life, in 1685, when he was shipwrecked on the coast of Florida, at the age of 87 years. This great longevity and good health of the early settlers, may probably be referred to the regularity of their habits, and the simplicity of their diet. They seldom ate meat, and they generally retired to rest soon after sunset. A pitch pine torch in the chimney corner, served to illuminate the common room, until the family prayer was said; and then the boys and girls retired to their respective chambers, to undress in the dark. Nor did they steam themselves to death over hot iron. Cook stoves were unknown, and no fire was put into a meeting house, except the Quaker, until 1820.

## CHAPTER VII.

Thomas Dexter claims Nahant—Pirate's Glen—Iron Company prosecuted—Hathorne's case of Slander—Order respecting Shoes—Wampanoag War—Wenepoykin dies—Life of Rev. Stephen Whiting—Petition of soldiers in the Indian War—1657 to 1657.

Thus he hath lost his lande soe broad  
Both hill and holt and moor and fenne,  
All but a poore and lonesome lodge  
That stood far off in a lonely glenne.

HEIRE OF LYNNE.



HAVING purchased Nahant of the Indian Sagamore for a suit of clothes, Thomas Dexter was not disposed to sit down in unconcern, when the town made known their intention of dividing it into lots for the benefit of all the people. At a town meeting held on February 24, 1657, the following order was taken: 'It was voted that Nahant should be laid out in planting lotts, and every householder should have equal in the dividing of it, noe man more than another; and every person to clear his lot of wood in six years, and he or they that do not clear their lotts of the wood, shall pay fifty shillings for the towne's use. Alsoe every householder is to have his and their lotts for seaven years, and it is to be laid down for a pasture for the towne; and in the seventh<sup>1</sup> every one that hath improved his lott by planting, shall then, that is in the seventh year, sow their lott with English corne; and in every acre of land as they improve, they shall, with their English corne, sow one bushel of English hay seed, and soe proportionable to all the land that is improved, a bushel of hay seed to one acre of land, and it is to be remembered, that no person is to raise any kind of building at all; and for laying out this land there is chosen, Francis Ingals, Henry Collins, James Axee, Adam Hawckes, Lieut. Thomas Marshall, John Hathorne, Andrew Mansfield.'—*Mass. Archives*.

This record is valuable, as it exhibits several interesting particulars. It shows that the purchase of Nahant by Mr. Dexter was not considered valid—it exhibits the most impartial specimen of practical democracy in this country, the lots being



apportioned to each householder equally, 'noe man more than another' — it furnishes an explanation of the cause and manner of Nahant being so entirely cleared of the beautiful wood which once grew upon it — and it shows that Nahant was early planted with English corn, that is, with wheat. On the passing of this order, Mr. Dexter commenced a suit against the town for occupying it. The people held a town meeting, in which they appointed Thomas Loughton, George Keysar, Robert Coats, and Joseph Armitage, a committee to defend their right. On the third of June, the following depositions were given.

1. 'Edward Ireson, aged 57 yeares or thereabouts, sworne, saith, that liveing with Mr. Thomas Dexter, I carried the fencing stuffe which master Dexter sett up to fence in Nahant, his part with the rest of the Inhabitants, and being and living with mr Dexter, I never heard him say a word of his buying of Nahant, but only his interest in Nahant for his fencing with the rest of the inhabitants, this was about 25 yeares since, and after this fence was sett up at nahant, all the new comers were to give two shillings sixpence a head or a piece vnto the setters up of the fence or inhabitants, and some of Salem brought Cattell alsoe to nahant, which were to give soe.'

2. 'The Testimony of Samuel Whiting, senior: of the Towne of Linne, Saith, that Mr. Humphries did desire that mr Eaton and his company might not only buy Nahant, but the whole Towne of Linne, and that mr Cobbet and he and others of the Towne went to mr Eaton to offer both to him, and to commit themselves to the providence of God, and at that time there was none that laid claim to or pleaded any interest in nahant, Save the town, and at that time farmer Dexter lived in the Towne of Linne.' The person to whom Lynn was thus offered for sale, was Theophilus Eaton, afterward governor of Connecticut. He came to Boston June 26, 1637, and went to New Haven in August of the same year.

3. 'The Deposition of Daniel Salmon, aged about 45 yeares, saith, that he being master Humphreye's servant, and about 23 yeares agoe, there being wolves in nahant, commanded that the whole traine band to goe drive them out, because it did belong to the whole towne, and farmer Dexter's men being then at training, went with the rest.'

4. 'This I Joseph Armitage, aged 57 or thereabouts, doe testifie, that about fifteen or sixteen yeares agoe, wee had a generall towne meeting in Lin, at that meeting there was much discourse about nahant, the men that did first fence at nahant and by an act of generall court did apprehend by fencing that nahant was theires, myself by purchase haveing a part therein, after much agitation in the meeting, and by persuasion of mr Cobbitt, they that then did plead a right by fencing, did yield

up all their right freely to the Inhabitants of the Towne, of which Thomas Dexter, senior, was one.'

5. 'We, George Sagomore and the Sagomore of Agawam, doe testify that Duke William so called did sell all Nahant unto ffarmer Dexter for a suite of Cloathes, which cloathes ffarmer Dexter had again, and gave vnto Duke William so called 2 or 3 coates for it again.' This deposition was signed with an S, as the mark of Masconomotd; and with a bow and arrow, as the mark of Winnepurkitt.

6. 'This, I Christopher Linsie doe testifie; that Thomas Dexter bought Nahant of Blacke Will, or Duke William, and employed me to fence part of it, when I lived with Thomas Dexter.'

7. 'I John Legg, aged 47 years or thereabouts, doe testifie, that when I was Mr. Humphrey's servant, there came unto my master's house one Blacke Will, as wee call him, an Indian, with a compleate Suit on his backe, I asked him where he had that suit, he said he had it of ffarmer Dexter, and he had sould him Nahant for it.'

Other depositions were given by Richard Walker, Edward Holyoke, George Farr, William Dixey, William Witter, John Ramsdell, John Hedge, and William Harcher. The court decided in favor of the defendants, and Mr. Dexter appealed to the Court of Assistants, who confirmed the judgment. Mr. Dexter was afterward granted liberty to tap the pitch pine trees on Nahant, as he had done before, for the purpose of making tar.

A vessel owned by Captain Thomas Wiggin of Portsmouth was wrecked on the Long Beach, and the sails, masts, anchor, &c., purchased by Thomas Wheeler, on the third of June.

Sagamore Wenepoykin petitioned the General Court, on the twenty-first of May, that he might possess some land, formerly owned by his brother, called Powder Horn Hill, in Chelsea. He was referred to the County Court.

**1658.** At the court of Assistants on the thirteenth of May, the towns of Lynn, Reading, and Chelsea, received permission to raise a troop of horse.

At the Quarterly Court, on the twenty-ninth of June, Lieutenant Thomas Marshall was authorized to perform the ceremony of marriage, and to take testimony in civil cases.

This year there was a great earthquake in New England, connected with which is the following story.

Some time previous, on one pleasant evening, a little after sunset, a small vessel was seen to anchor near the mouth of Saugus river. A boat was presently lowered from her side, into which four men descended, and moved up the river a considera-



ble distance, when they landed, and proceeded directly into the woods. They had been noticed by only a few individuals; but in those early times, when the people were surrounded by danger, and easily susceptible of alarm, such an incident was well calculated to awaken suspicion, and in the course of the evening the intelligence was conveyed to many houses. In the morning, the people naturally directed their eyes toward the shore, in search of the strange vessel—but she was gone, and no trace could be found either of her or her singular crew. It was afterward ascertained that, on that morning, one of the men at the Iron Works, on going into the foundry, discovered a paper, on which was written, that if a quantity of shackles, handcuffs, hatchets, and other articles of iron manufacture, were made and deposited, with secrecy, in a certain place in the woods, which was particularly designated, an amount of silver, to their full value, would be found in their place. The articles were made in a few days, and placed in conformity with the directions. On the next morning they were gone, and the money was found according to the promise; but though a watch had been kept, no vessel was seen. Some months afterward, the four men returned, and selected one of the most secluded and romantic spots in the woods of Saugus, for their abode. The place of their retreat was a deep narrow valley, shut in on two sides by high hills and craggy precipitous rocks, and shrouded on the others by thick pines, hemlocks, and cedars, between which there was only one small spot to which the rays of the sun at noon could penetrate. On climbing up the rude and almost perpendicular steps of the rock on the eastern side, the eye could command a full view of the bay on the south, and a prospect of a considerable portion of the surrounding country. The place of their retreat has ever since been called the Pirates' Glen, and they could not have selected a spot on the coast for many miles, more favorable for the purposes both of concealment and observation. Even at this day, when the neighborhood has become thickly peopled, it is still a lonely and desolate place, and probably not one in a hundred of the inhabitants has ever descended into its silent and gloomy recess. There the pirates built a small hut, made a garden, and dug a well, the appearance of which is still visible. It has been supposed that they buried money; but though people have dug there, and in several other places, none has ever been found. After residing there some time, their retreat became known, and one of the king's cruisers appeared on the coast. They were traced to their glen, and three of them were taken and carried to England, where it is probable they were executed. The other, whose name was Thomas Veal, escaped to a rock in the woods, about two miles to the north, in which was a spacious cavern, where the pirates had previously deposited

some of their plunder. There the fugitive fixed his residence, and practised the trade of a shoemaker, occasionally coming down to the village to obtain articles of sustenance. He continued his residence till the great earthquake this year, when the top of the rock was loosened, and crushed down into the mouth of the cavern, enclosing the unfortunate inmate in its unyielding prison. It has ever since been called the Pirate's Dungeon.

**1659.** A road was laid out from Lynn to Marblehead, over the Swampscot beaches, on the fifth of July. In reference to the part between Broadway and King's Beach, the Committee say, 'it has been a country highway thirty and odd years, to the knowledge of many of us.'

At the Quarterly Court, on the twenty-ninth of November, 'Thomas Marshall, of Lynn, is allowed by this court, to sell stronge water to trauffers, and also other meet provisions.'

The General Court had passed some very severe laws against the people called Friends or Quakers, forbidding any even to admit them into their houses, under a penalty of forty shillings an hour. Mr. Zacheus Gould had offended against this order, for which he was arraigned by the court. On the 25th of November, 'The deputies having heard of what Zacheus Gould hath alleged in Court, in reference to his entertainment of Quakers, do think it meet that the rigor of the law, in that case provided, be exercised upon him, but considering his ingenious confession, and profession of his ignorance of the law; and he also having long attended the Court, do judge that he shall only be admonished for his offence by the governor, and so be dismissed the court, and all with reference to the consent of our honored magistrates hereto.' This decision of the deputies was sent to the magistrates, and returned with this endorsement: 'The magistrates consent not thereto.' So it is probable that Mr. Gould was compelled to pay his fine.

The court this year enacted that the festival of Christmas should not be observed, under a penalty of five shillings.

**1660.** Mr. Adam Hawkes commenced a suit, in June, against Oliver Purchis, agent for the Iron Company, for damage by overflowing his land. The following papers relating to this subject, were found in the files of the Quarterly Court.

'The deposition of Joseph Jenks, senior, saith, that having conference with adam hawkes about the great dam at the Iron works at Lin, he complayned that he suffered great damage by the water flowing his ground. I answered him, I thought you had satisfaction for all from the old companie, he said he had from the *old* company, and further saith not.'



' This, I Charles Phillopes do testifie, that I, keepeing of the watter at the Irone Workes, since Mr. Porchas came there, Mr. Porchas did att all times charge me to keepe the watter Lowe, that it might not damage Mr. Hawkes, which I did, and had much ill will of the workmen for the same.'

Others testified that the lands had been much overflowed. Francis Hutchinson said, that the water had been raised so high, that the bridge before Mr. Hawkes' house had several times been broken up, and 'the peces of tember raised up and Made Sweme.' John Knight and Thomas Wellman were appointed to ascertain the damage. They stated that the corn had been 'Much Spoilled,' and the wells 'sometimes ffloted;' that the English grass had been much damaged, and the tobacco lands much injured, 'in laying them so Coulld.' They judged the damage to be 'the ualloation of ten pounds a yeere.'

**1661.** ' At a Generall Towne Meetinge, the 30th of December, 1661, vpon the request of Daniell Salmon for some land, in regard he was a soldier att the Pequid warrs, and it was ordered by vote that Ensign John ffuller, Allen Breed, senior, and Richard Johnson, should vew the land adjoyninge to his house lott, and to giue report of it vnto the next towne meetinge.'

**1662.** Mr. William Longley prosecuted the town, for not laying out to him forty acres of land, according to the division of 1638. The case was defended by John Hathorne and Henry Collins. In March, the Court decided that he should have the forty acres of land or forty pounds in money.

On the thirteenth of May, the boundary line between Lynn and Boston was marked. It ran 'from the middle of Bride's brooke, where the foot path now goeth.' This line has since become the boundary between Saugus and Chelsea.

For the first time since the organization of the general government in 1634, the town of Lynn sent no representative.

**1663.** On the evening of January twenty-sixth, there was an earthquake.

Mr. John Hathorne complained to the church at Lynn, that Andrew Mansfield and William Longley had given false testimony in the recent land case, for which they were censured. They appealed to the county court, accusing Mr. Hathorne of slander, of which he was found guilty, and sentenced to pay a fine of £10, and make a public acknowledgment in the meeting-house at Lynn; or else to pay £20 and costs. On the fourth of April, the court directed the following letter to the church at Lynn.

' Reverend and loving friends and brethren: We understand

that John Hathorne hath accused Andrew Mansfield and William Longley in the church of Lynn, for giving a false testimony against himself and Henry Collins, at the court of Ipswich, in March this was 12 month, and for which the said Mansfield and Longley stand convicted in the church, and finding themselves aggrieved thereat, hath brought their complaint against the said Hathorne in several actions of slander, which hath had a full and impartial hearing, and due examination, and by the verdict of the jury the said Hathorne is found guilty. Now because it is much to be desired that contrary judgments in one and the same case may be prevented, if possibly it may be attained, and one power strive not to clash against the other, we thought it expedient, before we give judgment in the case, to commend the same to the serious consideration and further examination of the church. We doubt not but that there hath been even more than a few both in the words and carriage of all the parties concerned, (though not the crime alleged), which if it may please God to put into their hearts to see and own so as may give the church opportunity and cause to change their mind and reverse their censures, so far as concerns the particular case in question, we hope it will be acceptable to God, satisfactory to ourselves and others, and the beginning of their own peace and quiet, the disturbance whereof hitherto we are very sensible of, and shall at all times be ready to afford them our best relief, as we may have opportunity or cognizance thereof. Had you been pleased, before your final conclusion, to have given us the grounds of your offence, we should kindly have resented such a request, and probably much of your trouble might have been prevented. We have deferred giving judgment in this case till the next session of this Court, to see what effect this our motion may have with them. Now the God of peace and wisdom give them understanding in all things, and guide them to such conclusions, in this and all other causes of concernment, as may be agreeable to his will, and conducing to your peace and welfare. So prays your friends and brethren.

By order of the County Court at Ipswich,

ROBERT LORD, *Clerk.*

To this letter Mr. Whiting made the following reply, on the fourth of May.

‘Honored and beloved in the God of love: We have received your letter, which you have been pleased to send to us, wherein we perceive how tender you are of our peace and how wisely careful you declare yourselves to be in preventing any clash that might arise between the civil and ecclesiastical powers, for which we desire to return thanks from our hearts to God and unto you concerning the matter you signify to us; what your



pleasure is that we should attend unto, we in all humility of mind and desirous of peace, have been willing to prove the parties concerned, to see what errors they would see and own; and for his part that complained to us, he doth acknowledge his uncomely speeches and carriage both unto the marshal, he being the court's officer, and also to brethren in the church, in the agitation of the matter, and doth condemn himself for sin in it, but for the other parties that stand convicted, they either do not see or will not acknowledge any error concerning their testimony, which we judge they ought. Wherefore we humbly present you with these few lines; not doubting but they will be pleasing to God and acceptable to you, whatever hath been suggested to yourselves by others that bear not good will to the peace of our church; we are sure of this, and our consciences bear us witness, that we have done nothing in opposition to you, or to cast any reflection upon your court proceedings, but have justified you all along in what you had done, *Secundum Allegata et probata*;\* in all our church agitations, which our adversaries can tell, if they would witness; but by reason of this, that some of our brethren did swear contrary oaths, we thought it our duty upon complaint made to us to search who they were that swore truly and who did falsifie their oath, and after much debate and dispute on Sunday days about this matter, we did judge those two men faulty, which in conscience we dare not go back from, they continuing as they do to this day. Could we discern any token of these men's repentance, for this that they are, especially one of them, censured in the church for, we should cheerfully take off the censures; but inasmuch as they justify themselves, and tell us if it were to do again they would do it, and lift up their crests in high language and come to such animosities from the jury's verdict, we desire the honored court would not count us transgressors if we do not recede from what we have done. Especially considering what disturbers they have been to us; especially one of them, for these several years. Now, therefore, honored and dear sirs, seeing by what we have done we have gone in our own way as a church in the search after sin, we hope the court will be tender of us and of him that complained to us on that account, and if we humbly crave that it be not grievous to you that we humbly tell you that in our judgment the discipline of these churches must fall; and if so, of what sad consequence it will be we leave it to those that are wiser than ourselves to judge, for this case being new and never acted before in this country, doth not only reflect on our church but on all the churches in the country; for if delinquents that are censured in churches, shall be countenanced by authority,

---

\* According as they were alleged and proved.

against the church in their acting in a just way, we humbly put it to the consideration of the court, whether there will not be a wide door opened to *Erastiannisme*,\* which we hope all of us do abhor from our hearts. Now the God of peace himself give the country, courts and church peace always by all means; grace be with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen.

‘Dated the 4th, 3d, 1663, with the consent and vote of the church.  
SAMUEL WHITING.’

On the next day, the Court replied as follows:

‘Reverend and beloved. We are very sorry our endeavors have not produced that effect we hoped and desired, but seem to have been interpreted contrary to our intentions, (and, we conceive, our words,) as an encroachment and destructive to the right and power of the churches. We have been taught, and do verily believe, the civil and ecclesiastical power may very well consist, and that no cause is so purely ecclesiastical, but the civil power may in its way deal therein. We are far from thinking the churches have no power but what is derived from the christian magistrates, or that the civil magistrate hath ecclesiastical powers, yet may, and ought, the matter so requiring, take cognizance and give judgment in solving a case, not in a church but civil way. We suppose we have kept much within these bounds in the case that hath been before us, and that our opinion and practice herein hath been as clear from *Erastianisme*, as some men’s assertions have been from the opposite error, and the declared judgments of our congregational divines. In that point, we own and desire so to regulate our proceedings accordingly. The God of order guide all our ministrations to his glory, and the peace and edification of his people.

‘By order and unanimous consent of the County Court, sitting at Ipswich, May 5th, 1663, p. me.

‘ROBERT LORD, Clerk.’

**1664.** On the twenty-eighth of June, Theophilus Bayley was licensed to keep a public house.†

This year the wheat is first mentioned to have been blasted,‡ and little has been raised on the sea-coast of New England since.

A public fast was appointed on account of dissensions and troubles.

In November, a comet appeared, and continued visible till February.

---

\* Thomas Erastus, in 1647, during the civil wars in England, contended that the Church had no power to censure or decree. This opinion was termed Erastianism.

† Q. C. Files. ‡ Hubbard.



**1665.** On the twenty-seventh of June, Thomas Laighton, Oliver Purchis, and John Fuller, were appointed commissioners to try small causes.

On the twenty-ninth of November, Mr. Joseph Jenks was admonished by the Salem Court, for not attending public worship.

**1666.** Mr. Andrew Mansfield was chosen Town Recorder.

On the seventh of December, the General Court assembled for religious consultation and prayer, in which Mr. Whiting and Mr. Cobbet sustained a part.

**1667.** At the Quarterly Court, on the twenty-sixth of June, Nathaniel Kertland, John Witt, and Ephraim Hall, were presented, 'for prophaining the Lord's Day By Going to William Craft's house, in time of publike exercise, (they both being at meeting,) and Drinkeing of his sider, and Rosteing his Aples, without eyther the consent or knowledge of him or his wife.'

Mr. Joseph Jenks presented a petition to the General Court for aid to commence a wire manufactory, but did not receive sufficient encouragement.

**1668.** The ministers of the several towns assembled in Boston, on the fifteenth of April, to hold a public disputation with the Baptists. Mr. Whiting and Mr. Cobbet were among the principal.

On the thirteenth of June, Robert Page of Boston was presented, 'for setinge saille from Nahant, in his boate, being Loaden with wood, thereby Profaining the Lord's daye.'

Land on the north side of the Common was this year sold for £4 an acre; and good salt marsh, £1.10.

**1669.** On the twenty-ninth of April, the boundary line between Lynn and Salem was defined. It ran from the west end of Brown's pond, in Danvers, 'to a noated Spring,' now called Mineral Spring; thence to 'Chip Bridge,' on the little brook which runs out near the house of John Phillips, and through the house of Daniel King, senior, to the sea-shore.

**1670.** The Court ordered, that the lands of deceased persons might be sold for the payment of their debts. Before this, if a person died in debt, his land was secure. The method of conveyance was by 'turfe and twig;' that is, the seller gave a turf from the ground, and a twig from a tree, into the hands of the buyer, as a token of relinquishment.

**1671.** On the eighteenth of January, there was a great snow storm, in which there was much thunder and lightning.

The following memorandum is copied from the leaf of a Bible. May 22. 'A very awful thunder, and a very great storm of wind and hail, especially at Dorchester town, so that it broke many glass windows at the meeting-house.'

Mr. Samuel Bennett prosecuted Mr. John Gifford, the former agent of the Iron Works, and attached property to the amount of £400, for labor performed for he company. On the twenty-seventh of June, the following testimony was given.

'John Paule, aged about forty-five years, sworne, saith, that living with Mr. Samuel Bennett, upon or about the time that the Iron Works were seased by Capt. Savage, in the year 53 as I take it, for I lived ther several years, and my constant imployment was to repaire carts, coale carts, mine carts, and other working materials for his teemes, for he kept 4 or 5 teemes, and sometimes 6 teemes, and he had the most teemes the last yeare of the Iron Works, when they were seased, and my master Bennet did yearly yearne a vast sum from the said Iron Works, for he commonly yearned forty or fifty shilling a daye for the former time, and the year 53, as aforesaid, for he had five or six teemes goeing generally every faire day.'\*

The Iron Works for several years were carried on with vigor, and furnished most of the iron used in the colony. But the want of ready money on the part of the purchasers, and the great freedom with which the company construed the liberal privileges of the court, caused their failure. The owners of the lands which had been injured, commenced several suits against them, and at last hired a person to cut away the flood gates and destroy the works. This was done in the night, when the pond was full. The dam was high, and just below it, on the left, stood the house of Mac Callum More Downing. The water rushed out, and flowed into the house, without disturbing the inhabitants, who were asleep in a chamber. In the morning, Mrs. Downing found a fine live fish flouncing in her oven. The works were much injured, and the depredator fled to Penobscot.

The suits against the Iron Works were protracted for more than twenty years. Mr. Hubbard says 'that instead of drawing out bars of iron for the country's use, there was hammered out nothing but contention and law suits.' The works were continued, though on a smaller scale, for more than one hundred years from their establishment. But they have long been discontinued, and nothing now is to be seen of them, except the heaps of scoria, nearly overgrown with grass, and called the 'Cinder Banks.'



**1672.** Mr. Daniel Salmon attached the property of the town, to the value of forty pounds, for not laying out the land granted to him in 1661. On the twenty-seventh of June, the Quarterly Court required the town to give him about six acres, near his house.

**1673.** On the eighteenth of June, a new road was laid out from Lynn to Marblehead, on the north of the former road. It is now called Essex Street.

The second inhabitant of Nahant, of whom we find any mention, was Robert Coats. He probably lived there as a fisherman and shepherd; and left before he married Mary Hodgkin, which was December 29, 1682. He had six sons and three daughters. After he left, there appears no inhabitant until 1690.

**1674.** Some of the inhabitants of Salem attempted to form a new church, and engaged Mr. Charles Nicholet for their minister; but their design being opposed, they came to Lynn to complete it. Mr. Rogers, Minister of Ipswich, wrote a letter to Mr. Phillips, Minister of Rowley, requesting him to assist in preventing the accomplishment. This letter was handed to Major Dennison, who subjoined the following approbation. 'Sir, Though I know nothing of what is above written, I cannot but approve the same in all respects.' On Sunday, the eleventh of December, the delegates from the churches of Boston, Woburn, Malden, and Lynn, with the governor, John Leverett, assembled at Lynn, and formed a council. They chose the Rev. John Oxenbridge, of Boston, moderator, and agreed that the new church should be formed. Afterward, the delegates of the churches of Salem, Ipswich, and Rowley, arrived; when the vote of the council was reconsidered, and decided in the negative. In the curious church records of Rowley, it is said that 'This work was begun without a sermon, which is not usual. There was also a breaking out into laughter, by a great part of the congregation, at a speech of Mr. Batters, that he did not approve of what Major Hathorne had spoken. Such carriage was never known on a first day, that I know of.' After the frustration of this design, Mr. Nicholet went to England.

**1675.** This year we find mention made, in the records of the Society of Friends, of the sufferings of that people, in consequence of their refusal to pay parish taxes. In reference to George Oaks, who appears to be one of the first who embraced the doctrines of George Fox in Lynn, is the following record. 'Taken away for the priest, Samuel Whiting, one cow, valued at £3.' Others afterward suffered, for refusing to perform mil-

itary duty, or to pay church rates, by having their cattle, corn, hay, and domestic furniture taken away.

On the twenty-ninth of August, there was 'a very great wind and rain, that blew down and twisted many trees.' — *Bible leaf*.

The year 1675 is memorable for the commencement of the great war of Pometacom, called king Philip, Sachem of the Wampanoag Indians, in Plymouth county and Rhode Island, just one hundred years before the war of the Independence of the United States. Pometacom was a son of Massasoit, but was more warlike than his father. Perhaps he had more cause to be so. As we have received the history of this war only from the pens of white men, it is probable that some incidents which might serve to illustrate its origin, have been passed unnoticed. It commenced in June, and some of the eastern tribes united with the Wampanoags. One of the causes of their offence, was an outrage offered by some sailors to the wife and child of Squando, Sagamore of Saco. Meeting them in a canoe, and having heard that young Indians could swim naturally, they overturned the frail bark. The insulted mother dived and brought up her child, but it died soon after.

The military company in Lynn, at this time, was commanded by Captain Thomas Marshall, Lieutenant Oliver Purchis, and Ensign John Fuller. The troops from Massachusetts, which went against the Indians, were commanded by Major Samuel Appleton.

Fifteen men were impressed at Lynn, by order of the Court, on the thirtieth of November, in addition to those who had been previously detached. Their names were Thomas Baker, Robert Driver, Job Farrington, Samuel Graves, Isaac Hart, Nicholas Hitchens, Daniel Hitchens, John Lindsey, Jonathan Locke, Charles Phillips, Samuel Rhodes, Henry Stacey, Samuel Tarbox, Andrew Townsend, and Isaac Wellman.

On the nineteenth of December, says the Bible Leaf, there was 'a dreadful fight with the Indians.' This was the great swamp fight, at South Kingston, R. I., when eighty white men and more than three hundred Indians were killed. Mr. Ephraim Newhall, of Lynn, was one of the slain.

Wenepoykin, the Sagamore of Lynn, who had never been in deep friendship with the whites, went and united with Pometacom. He probably had some causes of offence which have been left unrecorded. Indeed the thousand little insults, which the men of his race have ever been in the habit of receiving from white men, and which must have been felt by his proud mind, might have been sufficient cause for his conduct. As a poetess has well said —

Small slights, contempt, neglect, unmixed with hate,  
Make up in number what they want in weight.



Two of the descendants of Nanapashemet, whose names were Quanapaug and Quanapohit, living on Deer Island, had become Christians, by the names of James and Thomas. These united with the whites, and became spies for them, for which they were to have £5 each; for which cause the Wampanoag Sachem offered a reward for their death, but they survived the war. Several anecdotes of their cunning are preserved by Mr. Drake. At one time, when they were taking him to Pometa-com, Quanapaug escaped by his skill. Quanapohit, also, came accidentally upon six of his armed enemies, whom he put to flight, and plundered their wigwam, by turning round and beckoning, as if he were calling his company.

**1676.** The war with the Indians was prosecuted by both parties with the most determined vigor and cruelty. Many towns were burnt, and many of the inhabitants put to death. Great numbers of the Indians also were killed, and those who were taken prisoners were most cruelly sold for slaves to the West Indies, against the earnest entreaties of some of the principal officers. At last, Philip was pursued to a swamp, near his residence at Mount Hope, and killed, on the morning of Saturday, the twelfth of August. After his death Annawon, Tispaquin, and others of his chiefs and warriors, submitted themselves, on the promise that their lives would be spared; but they were unmercifully put to death. From the expressions of some of them, it is probable that they did not wish to survive the destruction of their nation.

Thus fell Philip, the last great king of the Wampanoags, — the last formidable enemy of the English. Like Sassacus, he foresaw the destruction of his nation; but he was at first friendly to the white people, and wept when he heard that some of them had been killed. The pen of the historian will do justice to his patriotism, and the harp of the poet will eulogize him in strains of immortality.

Tradition, legend, tune, and song,  
Shall many an age that wail prolong;  
Still from the sire the son shall hear  
Of that stern strife and carnage drear.

Wenepoykin, who had joined with the Wampanoags, was taken prisoner, and sold as a slave to Barbadoes. He returned in 1684, at the end of eight years, and died at the house of his relative, James Muminquash, at the age of 68 years. The testimony of Tokowampate and Waban, given October 7, 1686, and preserved in Essex Registry of Deeds, declares, that 'Sagamore George, when he came from Barbadoes, lived some time, and died at the house of James Runneymarsh.' The old chief, who

had ruled in freedom over more than half the State of Massachusetts, returned from his slavery, sad and broken-hearted, to die in a lone wigwam, in the forest of Natick, in the presence of his sister Yawata.

A law had been passed, prohibiting the friendly Indians from going more than one mile from their own wigwams. On the twenty-fifth of October, the Court agreed that they might go out to gather 'chesnuts and other nuts in the wilderness,' if two white men went with each company, whose charges were to be paid by the Indians.

✓ The injuries which the Indians received in the early history of our country, cannot now be repaired; but the opportunity is afforded for our national government to manifest its high sense of magnanimity and justice, and to evince to the world that republics are not unmindful of honor and right, by redressing any wrongs which the existing red men have received, and by providing for their welfare, in a manner becoming a great and powerful nation, which has received its extensive domains from a people who are now wandering as fugitives in the land of their fathers. Such conduct, it may reasonably be expected, will receive the approbation of heaven; and it cannot be supposed, that He who watches the fall of the sparrow, will regard its neglect with indifference.

The leaf of the Bible says, there was 'a great sickness this year.'

**1677.** The following letter was addressed by Mr. Whiting to Increase Mather, October 1, 1677.

'Reverend and Dear Cousin. I acknowledge myself much engaged, as to God for all his mercies, so to yourself for your indefatigable labors, both in our church here, and in your writings, which of your love you have sent to me from time to time; and especially for your late book which you sent to me, wherein you have outdone any that I have seen upon that subject. Go on, dear cousin, and the Lord prosper your endeavors for the glory of his great name, and the good of many souls. And let me beg one request of you, that you would set pen to paper in writing an history of New England, since the coming of our chief men hither; which you may do, by conferring with Mr. Higginson, and some of the first planters in Salem, and in other places; which I hope you may easily accomplish, having by your diligence and search found out so much history concerning the Pequot war. And the rather let me entreat this favor of you, because it hath not been hitherto done by any in a polite and scholar like way; which if it were so done would glad the hearts of the Lord's people, and turn to your great account in the last



and great day of the Lord Jesus. Thus commending my love to you and your loving consort, with thanks to you for your kindness to me and my son, when we were last with you at your house, beseeching the Lord to bless you and all yours, not knowing how shortly I must put off this earthly tabernacle, I rest,

SAMUEL WHITING.'

At this time, there was but one Post Office in Massachusetts, which was at Boston. On the third of December, the Court of Assistants appointed John Hayward Postmaster for the whole colony.

On Thanksgiving day, the fourth of December, happened one of the greatest storms ever known in New England. It blew down many houses and many trees.

**1678.** This year, Samuel Appleton, Jr., took possession of the Iron Works, by a grant in the will of William Payne, of Boston. On the ninth of June, Thomas Savage prosecuted an old mortgage which he held on the property, and Samuel Waite testifies, 'There is land, rated at Three Thousand acres of Iron Mill Land.' In 1679, Mr. Appleton had possession of three fourths of the Iron Works, valued at £1500. The law suits respecting the Iron Works were protracted to a tedious length, and papers enough are preserved in the Massachusetts archives, respecting them, to form a volume.

The Selectmen, or as they were called, 'the Seven Prudential men,' this year, were Thomas Loughton, Richard Walker, Andrew Mansfield, William Bassett, Nathaniel Kertland, John Burrill, and Ralph King. The price of corn was two shillings a bushel.

The first meetinghouse of the Society of Friends, says an old record of one of their members, 'was raised on Wolf Hill,' where their meetinghouse now stands.

The people of Reading petitioned the General Court, on the third of October, that the alewives might be permitted to come up to Reading Pond, as before; that they might find no obstruction at the Iron Works, but 'come up freely into our ponds, where they have their natural breeding place;' which was granted.

Thomas Dexter, Jr., and Captain James Oliver, administrators to the estate of Thomas Dexter, prosecuted the town of Lynn, on the twenty-sixth of November, at Boston, for the recovery of Nahant. The jury decided in favor of the town. This was a review of the case decided September 1, 1657, against Mr. Dexter.

**1679.** In the number of the early ministers of New England, there were few who deserved a higher celebrity, for the purity of their character, and the fervor of their piety, than the Rev. Samuel Whiting. His name has been frequently overlooked by biographers, and little known and estimated even in his own parish. He has no stone erected to his memory, and the very place where he was buried is known only to a few.

Dust long outlasts the storied stone,  
But thou—thy very dust is gone.

This is another instance of the truth of the observation, that men are indebted to the poet and the historian for their remembrance to after ages. An honorable memorial of the dererving dead is one of the rewards of goodness, and the very desire of remembrance is itself a virtue. We naturally love the idea that we are remembered by others, and that our names will be known beyond the circle of those with whom we shared the endearments of friendship. It is sweet to think that we have not altogether lived in vain; to persuade ourselves that we have conferred some slight benefit on the world, and that posterity will repay the pleasing debt by mentioning our names with expressions of regard. It is not vanity, it is not ambition; it is a pure love of mankind, an exalting sense of right, that twines itself around every virtuous and noble mind, raising it above the enjoyment of worldliness, and making us wish to prolong our existence in the memory of the good.

Rev. Samuel Whiting was born at Boston, in Lincolnshire, England, on the twentieth of November, 1597. His father, Mr. John Whiting, was mayor of that city in 1600; and his brother John obtained the same office in 1625. Having completed his studies in the school of his birth place, young Samuel entered the university at Cambridge; where he had for his classmate, his cousin, Anthony Tuckney, afterward Master of St. John's College, with whom he commenced a friendship, which was not quenched by the waters of the Atlantic. He received impressions of piety at an early age, and loved to indulge his meditations in the retired walks of Emanuel College. He entered college in 1613, took his first degree in 1616, and his second in 1620. Having received orders in the Church of England, he became chaplain in a family consisting of five ladies and two knights, Sir Nathaniel Bacon and Sir Roger Townsend, with whom he resided three years. He then went to old Lynn, where he spent three years more, a colleague with Mr. Price. While at that place, complaints were made to the Bishop of Norwich, of his nonconformity in administrating the services of the church, on which he removed to Skirbick, one mile from old



Boston. There the complaints were renewed, on which he determined to sell his possessions and embark for America. He remarked, 'I am going into the wilderness, to sacrifice unto the Lord, and I will not leave a hoof behind me.' The beauty, piety, and harmony of the church, in our own time, induce us to wonder why a pious man should have objected to her services. But the church, at that period demanded more than is now required; and the dissenters, by their repugnance to those ceremonies and requisitions which were excessive, were driven to revolt against those forms which were really judicious.

Mr. Whiting sailed from England in the beginning of April, 1636, and arrived at Boston on the twenty-sixth of May. He was very sea sick on his passage, during which he preached but one sermon. He observed, that he would 'much rather have undergone six weeks imprisonment for a good cause, than six weeks of such terrible sea sickness.' He came to Lynn in June, and was installed on the eighth of November, at the age of thirty-nine. He was admitted to the privileges of a freeman on the seventeenth of December. His residence was nearly opposite the meetinghouse, in Shepherd street. He had a walk in his orchard, in which he used to indulge his habit of meditation; and some who frequently saw him walking there, remarked, 'There does our dear pastor walk with God every day.' An anecdote related of him, will serve to illustrate his character. In one of his excursions to a neighboring town, he stopped at a tavern, where a company were revelling. As he passed their door, he thus addressed them: 'Friends, if you are sure that your sins are pardoned, you may be wisely merry.' He is reputed to have been a man of good learning, and an excellent Hebrew scholar. In 1649, he delivered a Latin oration at Cambridge; a copy of which is preserved in the Library of the Massachusetts Historical Society. He employed much of his leisure in reading history; and he could scarcely have chosen a study more indicative of the seriousness and solidity of his mind. He possessed great command over his passions, was extremely mild and affable in his deportment, and his countenance was generally illumined by a smile. He was chosen moderator in several ecclesiastical councils, and appears to have been generally respected. In his preaching, he was ardent and devoted; but he was less disposed to frighten his hearers by wild and boisterous efforts, than to win them to virtue by mild and persuasive eloquence.

In the latter part of his life, Mr. Whiting was afflicted by a complication of disorders, and endured many hours of most excruciating pain. But his patience was inexhaustible, and his strength enabled him to continue the performance of the public services till a very advanced age, in which he was assisted by

his youngest son, Joseph. A short time before his death, he presented to the General Court a claim for five hundred acres of land, which he had by deed of gift, from his brother-in-law, Mr. Richard Westland, an alderman of Boston, in England, who had loaned money to the colony of Massachusetts. As the claim had been some time due, the Court allowed him six hundred acres. He made his will on the twenty-fifth of February, 1679. He commences thus: 'After my committing of my dear flock unto the tender care of that great and good Shepherd, the Lord Jesus Christ.' He gave his son Samuel, at Billerica, his house and four hundred acres of land at Dunstable, valued at £362, and fourteen acres of marsh at Lynn. He remembered his son John, at Leverton, in England, and his daughters, at Roxbury and Topsfield, and bequeathed his dwellinghouse, orchard, and eight acres of marsh, at Lynn, to his son Joseph. His money and plate amounted to £77 2; and his whole estate to £570 15 6. He died on the eleventh of December, 1679, at the age of eighty-two; having preached at Lynn forty-three years.

The death of Mr. Whiting called forth the following elegy from the pen of Mr. Benjamin Thomson, a schoolmaster, born at Braintree, and the first native American poet.

UPON THE VERY REVEREND SAMUEL WHITING.

Mount, FAME, the glorious chariot of the sun!  
Through the world's cirque, all you, her heralds, run,  
And let this great saint's merits be revealed,  
Which during life he studiously concealed.  
Cite all the Levites, fetch the sons of art,  
In these our dolours to sustain a part;  
Warn all that value worth, and every one  
Within their eyes to bring a Helicon;  
For in this single person we have lost  
More riches than an India has engrost.

When Wilson, that plerophory of love,  
Did from our banks up to his centre move,  
Rare Whiting quotes Columbus on this coast,  
Producing gems of which a king might boast.  
More splendid far than ever Aaron wore,  
Within his breast this sacred father bore.  
Sound doctrine, Urim, in his holy cell,  
And all perfections, Thummim, there did dwell.  
His holy vesture was his innocence;  
His speech, embroideries of curious sense.  
Such awful gravity this doctor used,  
As if an angel every word infused;  
No turgent style, but Asiatic lore;  
Conduits were almost full, seldom run o'er  
The banks of time—come visit when you will,  
The streams of nectar were descending still.  
Much like semtemfluous Nilus, rising so,  
He watered Christians round, and made them grow.  
His modest whispers could the conscience reach,  
As well as whirlwinds, which some others preach.  
No Boanerges, yet could touch the heart,  
And clench his doctrine with the meekest art.



His learning and his language might become  
A province not inferior to Rome.  
Glorious was Europe's heaven, when such as these,  
Stars of his size, shone in each diocese.

Who writ'st the fathers' lives, either make room,  
Or with his name begin your second tome.  
Aged Polycarp, deep Origen, and such,  
Whose worth your quills, your wits not them enrich ;  
Lactantius, Cyprian, Basil, too, the great,  
Quaint Jerome, Austin, of the foremost seat,  
With Ambrose, and more of the highest class  
In Christ's great school, with honor I let pass,  
And humbly pay my debt to Whiting's ghost,  
Of whom both Englands may with reason boast.  
Nations for men of lesser worth have strove  
To have the fame, and in transports of love  
Built temples, or fixed statues of pure gold,  
And their vast worth to after ages told.  
His modesty forbade so fair a tomb,  
Who in ten thousand hearts obtained a room.

What sweet composure in his angel face !  
What soft affections ! melting gleams of grace !  
How mildly pleasant ! by his closed lips  
Rhetoric's bright body suffers an eclipse.  
Should half his sentences be fairly numbered,  
And weighed in wisdom's scales, 't would spoil a Lombard,  
And churches' homilies but homily be,  
If, venerable Whiting, set by thee.  
Profoundest judgment, with a meekness rare,  
Preferred him to the moderator's chair,  
Where, like truth's champion, with his piercing eye,  
He silenced errors, and bade Hectors fly.  
Soft answers quell hot passions, ne'er too soft,  
Where solid judgment is enthroned aloft.  
Church doctors are my witnesses, that here  
Affections always kept their proper sphere  
Without those wilder eccentricities,  
Which spot the fairest fields of men most wise.  
In pleasant places fall that people's line,  
Who have but shadows of men thus divine ;  
Much more their presence, and heaven piercing prayers,  
Thus many years to mind our soul affairs.

The poorest soil oft has the richest mine !  
This weighty ore, poor Lynn, was lately thine.  
O, wondrous mercy ! but this glorious light  
Hath left thee in the terrors of the night.  
New-England, didst thou know this mighty one,  
His weight and worth, thou 'dst think thyself undone.  
One of thy golden chariots, which among  
The clergy rendered thee a thousand strong ;  
One who for learning, wisdom, grace, and years,  
Among the Levites hath not many peers ;  
One, yet with God, a kind of heavenly band,  
Who did whole regiments of woes withstand ;  
One that prevailed with heaven ; one greatly mist  
On earth, he gained of Christ whate'er he list ;  
One of a world, who was both born and bred  
At wisdom's feet, hard by the fountain's head.  
The loss of such a one would fetch a tear  
From Niobe herself, if she were here.  
What qualifies our grief, centres in this ;  
Be our loss ne'er so great, the gain is his.

The following epitaph has been applied to him by Mr. Mather.

In Christo vixi morior, vivoque, Whitingus ;  
Do sordes morti, cetera, O Christe, tibi, do.

In Christ I lived and died, and yet I live ;  
My dust to earth, my soul to Christ, I give.

Mr. Whiting published the following pamphlets and books.

1. A Latin Oration, delivered at Cambridge, on Commencement day, 1649.

2. A Sermon, preached before the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, at Boston, 1660.

3. 'A Discourse of the Last Judgment, or Short Notes upon Matthew 25, from verse 31 to the end of the chapter, concerning the Judgment to come, and our preparation to stand before the great Judge of quick and dead ; which are of sweetest comfort to the elect sheep, and a most dreadful amazement and terror to reprobate goats.' Cambridge, 1664, 12mo. 160 pages.

4. 'Abraham's Humble Intercession for Sodom, and the Lord's Gracious Answer in Concession thereto.' Cambridge, 1666, 12mo. 349 pages. From this work the following extracts are taken.

'What is it to draw nigh to God in prayer? It is not to come with loud expressions, when we pray before Him. Loud crying in the ears of God, is not to draw near to God. They are nearer to God, that silently whisper in His ears and tell Him what they want, and what they would have of Him. They have the King's ear, not that call loudest, but those that speak softly to him, as those of the council and bed chamber. So they are nearest God, and have His ear most, that speak softly to Him in prayer.

'In what manner are we to draw nigh to God in prayer? In sincerity, with a true heart. Truth is the Christian soldier's girdle. We must be true at all times ; much more when we fall upon our knees and pray before the Lord.

'We, in this country, have left our near relations, brothers, sisters, fathers' houses, nearest and dearest friends ; but if we can get nearer to God here, He will be instead of all, more than all to us. He hath the fulness of all the sweetest relations bound up in Him. We may take that out of God, that we forsook in father, mother, brother, sister, and friend, that hath been as near and dear as our own soul.

'Even among the most wicked sinners, there may be found some righteous ; some corn among the chaff—some jewels among the sands—some pearls among a multitude of shells.

'Who hath made England to differ from other nations, that more jewels are found there than elsewhere? or what hath that Island that it hath not received? The East and West Indies yield their gold, and pearl, and sweet spices ; but I know where



the golden, spicy, fragrant Christians be — England hath yielded these. Yet not England, but the grace of God, that hath been ever with them. We see what hope we may have concerning New-England; though we do not deserve to be named the same day with our dear mother.'

In enumerating the evils with which the people of New-England were obliged to contend, he says, it is cause 'for humiliation, that our sins have exposed us to live among such wicked sinners,' with whom he ranks 'Atheists and Quakers.'

Mr. Whiting married two wives in England. By his first wife he had three children. Two of them were sons, who, with their mother, died in England. The other was a daughter, who came with her father to America, and married Mr. Thomas Weld, of Roxbury.

His second wife was Elizabeth St. John, of Bedfordshire, to whom he was married in 1630. She was a daughter of Oliver St. John, Chief Justice of England in the time of Oliver Cromwell. She came to Lynn with her husband, and died on the third of March, 1677, aged seventy-two years. She was a woman of uncommon piety, seriousness, and discretion; and not only assisted her husband in writing his sermons, but by her care and prudence relieved him from all attention to temporal concerns. By her he had six children; four sons and two daughters. One daughter married the Rev. Jeremiah Hobart, of Topsfield; and one son and one daughter died at Lynn. The other three sons received an education at Cambridge.

1. Rev. Samuel Whiting, Jr., was born in England, 1633. He studied with his father, at Lynn, and graduated at Cambridge, in 1653. He was ordained minister of Billerica, 11 November, 1663; preached the Artillery Election Sermon, in 1682; and died 28 February, 1713, aged 79 years. The name of his wife was Dorcas, and he had ten children. 1. Elizabeth. 2. Samuel. 3. Rev. John, minister at Lancaster; where he was killed by the Indians, 11 September, 1697, at the age of 33. 4. Oliver. 5. Dorothy. 6. Joseph. 7. James. 8. Eunice. 9. Benjamin. 10. Benjamin.

2. Rev. John Whiting, graduated at Cambridge, in 1653. He returned to England, became a minister of the Church, and died at Leverton, in Lincolnshire, October 11, 1689, very extensively respected.

3. Rev. Joseph Whiting graduated in 1661. He was ordained at Lynn, 6 October, 1680, and soon after removed to Southampton, on Long Island. He married Sarah Danforth, of Cambridge, daughter of Thomas Danforth, Deputy Governor. He had six children, born at Lynn. 1. Samuel, born 3 July, 1674. 2. Joseph, born 22 November, 1675. 3. Joseph, born 8 May, 1677. 4. Thomas, born 20 May, 1678. 5. Joseph, born 14 Jan-

uary, 1680. 6. John, born 20 January, 1681. All except the first and sixth, died within a few weeks of their birth.

Of the descendants of Mr. Whiting, now living, are the Rev. Samuel Whiting, minister at Billerica; and Henry Whiting, a major in the service of the United States, and author of a beautiful little Indian tale, entitled *Ontwa, or the Son of the Forest*.

**1680.** On the sixth of October, Mr. Jeremiah Shepherd was ordained pastor, and Mr. Joseph Whiting teacher, of the church at Lynn.

On the eighteenth of November, a very remarkable comet made its appearance, and continued about two months. The train was thirty degrees in length, very broad and bright, and nearly attained the zenith. A memorandum, on a Bible leaf, thus remarks: 'A blazing star, at its greatest height, to my apprehension, terrible to behold.' It was regarded by most people with fear, as the sign of some great calamity. This was the comet on which Sir Isaac Newton made his interesting observations. While the party, who were predominant in religious affairs, were noting every misfortune which befell those of a different opinion, as the judgments of God; they, on the other hand, regarded the earthquakes, the comets, and the blighting of the wheat, as manifestations of his displeasure against their persecutors.

Dr. Philip Read, of Lynn, complained to the Court at Salem, of Mrs. Margaret Gifford, as being a witch. She was a respectable woman, and wife of Mr. John Gifford, formerly agent for the Iron Works. The complainant said, 'he verily believed that she was a witch, for there were some things which could not be accounted for by natural causes.' Mrs. Gifford gave no regard to her summons, and the Court very prudently suspended their inquiries.

'We present the wife of John Davis, of Lynn, for breaking her husband's head with a quart pot.' *Essex Court Rec.*

**1681.** In town meeting, on the second of March, the people voted, that Mr. Shepard should be allowed eighty pounds, lawful money, a year, for his salary; one third of which was to be paid in money, and the other two thirds in articles of domestic production, at stipulated prices. Besides the salary, a contribution was to be kept open.

**1682.** The meetinghouse was this year removed from Shepard street to the centre of the common, and rebuilt. It was fifty feet long, and forty-four wide. It had folding doors on three sides, without porches. The top of each door was formed into two semicircular arches. The windows consisted of small



diamond panes, set in sashes of lead. The floor was at first supplied with seats; and pews were afterward separately set up by individuals, as they obtained permission of the town. By this means, the interior came at length to present a singular appearance. Some of the pews were large, and some small; some square, and some oblong; some with seats on three sides, and some with a seat on one side; some with small oak panels, and some with large pine ones; and most of them were surmounted by a little balustrade, with small columns, of various patterns, according to the taste of the proprietors. Most of the square pews had a chair in the centre, for the comfort of the old lady or gentleman, the master or mistress of the family, by whom it was occupied. One pew, occupied by black people, was elevated above the stairs in one corner, near to the ceiling. The galleries were extended on three sides, supported by six oak columns, and guarded by a turned balustrade. They were ascended by two flights of stairs, one in each corner, on the south side. The pulpit was on the north side, and sufficiently large to contain ten persons. The top of the room was unceiled for many years, and exhibited enormous beams of oak, traversing the roof in all directions. The light from the diamond windows in the gables, shining down upon the great oak beams, presented quite a picturesque appearance. The roof presented four pediments; and was surmounted by a cupola, with a roof in the form of an inverted tunnel. It had a small bell, which was rung by a rope descending in the centre of the room. The town meetings continued to be held in this house till 1806. A sketch of this building, drawn before its form was changed, may be seen on page 99.

**1683.** This year, the heirs of Major Thomas Savage sold the six hundred acres, called Hammersmith, or the lands of the Iron Works, to Samuel Appleton, who thus became possessed of the whole property. In 1688, he sold the whole to James Taylor, of Boston, who was the last proprietor of the Iron Works of whom I have found any record. They probably ceased operations about this time.

**1684.** A letter written at Haverhill this year, by N. Saltonstall, to the captain of a militia company, thus proceeds: 'I have orders, also, to require you to provide a flight of colors for your foot company, the ground field or flight whereof is to be green, with a red cross in a white field in the angle, according to the ancient custom of our own English nation, and the English plantations in North America, and our own practice in our ships. This was the American standard, till the stripes and stars were introduced, in 1776.

**1685.** The following singular deposition is transcribed from the files of the Quarterly Court, and is dated July 1, 1685:

‘The deposition of Joseph Farr, and John Burrill, junior, testifieth and saith, that they being at the house of Francis Burrill, and there being some difference betwixt Francis Burrill and Benjamin Farr, and we abovesaid understanding that the said Benjamin Farr had been a suitor to Elizabeth Burrill, the daughter of Francis Burrill, and he was something troubled that Benjamin had been so long from his daughter, and the said Francis Burrill told the said Benjamin Farr that if he had more love to his marsh, or to any estate of his, than to his daughter, he should not go into his house; for he should be left to his liberty, he should not be engaged to anything more than he was freely willing to give his daughter, if he had her; and this was about two days before they was married.’

At a town meeting, on the first of December, the people voted, that no inhabitant should cut any green tree upon the common lands, which was less than one foot in diameter.

The following petition of some of the inhabitants of Lynn, for a remuneration of their services in the Wampanoag war, was presented this year.

‘To the Honoured Governor and Company, the General Court of the Massachusetts Bay, that is to be assembled the 27 May, 1685, the humble petition of several inhabitants of Lynn, who were sold, impressed, and sent forth for the service of the country, that was with the Indians in the long march in the Nipmugg country, and the fight at the fort in Narragansett, humbly sheweth, That your petitioners did, in obedience unto the authority which God had set over them, and love to their country, leave their deare relations, some of us our dear wives and children, which we would have gladly remained at home, and the bond of love and duty would have bound us to choose rather soe to have done considering the season and time of the year, when that hard service was to be performed. But your petitioners left what was dear to them, and preferred the publique weal above the private enjoyments, and did cleave thereunto, and exposed ourselves to the difficulties and hardships of the winter, as well as the dangers of that cruel warr, with consideration to the enemy. What our hardships and difficulties were is well known to some of your worships, being our honoured magistrates, as also what mercy it was from the Lord, who alone preserved us, and gave us our lives for a prey, by leading us through such imminent dangers, whereby the Lord gave us to see many of our dear friends lose their blood and life, which might have been our case, but that God soe disposed toward us deliverance and strength to returne to our homes, which we desire to remem-



ber and acknowledge to his most glorious praise. But yet, we take the boldnes to signifie to this honored Court, how that service was noe whitt to our particular outward advantage, but to the contrary, much to our disadvantage. Had we had the liberty of staying at home, as our neighbors had, though we had paid double rates, it would have been to our advantage, as indeed we did pay our properties by our estates in the publick rates to the utmost bounds. Notwithstanding all, yet we humbly conceive, that, by the suppression of the enemy, which God of his great mercy vouchsafed, wee poor soldiers and servants to the country were instruments to procure much land, which we doubt not shall and will be improved, by the prudence of this honoured Court, unto people that need most especially. And we, your poor petitioners, are divers of us in need of land, for want whereof some of us are forced upon considerations of departing this Colony and Government, to seek accommodations whereby the better to maintaine the charge in our families, with our wives and children, and to leave unto them when the Lord shall take us away by death, which we must expect. And divers of us have reason to fear our days may be much shortened by our hard service in the war, from the pains and aches of our bodies, that we feel in our bones and sinews, and lameness thereby taking hold of us much, especially at the spring and fall, whereby we are hindered and disabled of that ability for our labour which we constantly had, through the mercy of God, before, that served in the warrs. Now, your poore petitioners are hopeful this honored Court will be moved with consideration and some respect to the poor soldiery, and particularly to us, that make bold to prefer our petition, humbly to crave, that we, whose names are hereunto subscribed, may be so graciously considered by this honored Court as to grant us some good tracks of land in the Nipmugg country, where we may find a place for a township, that we, your petitioners, and our posterity may live in the same colony where our fathers did, and left us, and probably many of those who went fellow soldiers in the war may be provided for, and their children also, in the portion of conquered lands their fathers fought for. Your petitioners think it is but a very reasonable request, which will be no way offensive to this honored Court, which, if they shall please to grant unto your petitioners, it will not only be satisfaction to their spirits for their service already done, but be a future obligation to them and theirs after them for future service, and ever to pray.' This petition was signed by twenty-five inhabitants of Lynn, whose names were: William Bassett, John Farrington, Nathaniel Ballard, Timothy Breed, Jonathan Locke, Daniel Johnson, Widow Hathorne, Samuel Tarbox, Samuel Graves, John Edmunds, Samuel Johnson, Daniel Golt, Joseph

Hawkes, Andrew Townsend, John Davis, Joseph Collins, Samuel Mower, Robert Potter, senior, Joseph Mansfield, Robert Driver, John Richards, John Linzey, Philip Kertland, Joseph Breed, Henry Rhodes. It was also signed by sixteen persons of other towns. On the third of June, the Court granted them a tract of land in Worcester county, eight miles square, on condition that thirty families with an orthodox minister, should settle there within four years.

**1686.** Mr. Oliver Purchis was chosen Town Clerk.

‘A great and terrible drouth, mostly in the 4th month, and continued in the 5th month, with but little rain; but the 18th, being the Sabbath, we had a sweet rain.’

James Quanupcowit and David Kunkskawmushat, descendants of Nanapashemet, sold a lot of land, on the West side of the Iron Works’ Pond, on the 28th of July, to Daniel Hitchings.

**1687.** At a town meeting on the 15th of February, ‘the town voted the Selectmen be a committee to look after encroached lands, or highways, from Francis Burrill’s barn to the gate that is by Timothy Breed’s, or parcels of land in places least prejudicial to the town, and make good sale of any of them on the Town’s behalf, for money to pay the Indians at the time appointed, and the necessary charges of that affair.’

On the 16th of February, Captain Thomas Marshall exchanged with the town his right in Stone’s meadow, in Lynnfield, for a right in Edwards’s meadow; and the town, at the request of Mr. Shepard, made a grant of it to the ministry.

Mr. Shepard kept the school several months this winter. Education, with the children of the early settlers, was a matter of convenience, rather than of accomplishment. I have seen the signatures of several hundreds of the first settlers, and have *fac similes* of many, and they are quite as good as an equal number of signatures taken at random at the present day. But in clearing the forest, and obtaining a subsistence, they had little leisure for their children to spend in study; and a month or two in winter, under the care of the minister, was the principal opportunity which they had to obtain the little learning requisite for their future life. The consequence was, that the generations succeeding the early settlers, from 1650 to 1790, were generally less learned than the first settlers, or than those who have lived since the Revolution.



## CHAPTER VIII.

Usurpation of Andros — Nahant claimed by Edward Randolph — Defended by the town — Horrible delusion of Witchcraft — Nahant claimed by Richard Woodey's heirs — Laws concerning Shoemakers — Wolves and Foxes killed — Grammar School — Indian War. 1688 to 1705.

‘ So tyrannizing and oppressing all.’

SPENCER.



**D**URING the administration of Sir Edmund Andros, the people of Lynn had an opportunity of witnessing the tendency of arbitrary government. Andros had been appointed by the British King, James II., Governor of all New England, and came over in 1686 to exercise that authority ; and his administration, for two years, was characterized by many acts of arbitrary power. He asserted, that the people of Massachusetts had forfeited their charter, and that all the lands belonged to the King. Edward Randolph, his Secretary, looking round among these lands, to see where he might establish a little dukedom, fixed his attention upon the beautiful domain of Nahant, which he requested the Governor to give to him. The following is a copy of his petition.

**1688.** ‘ To his Excellency, Sir Edmund Andros, Knight, Governor, &c. &c. The humble petition of Edward Randolph, that there is a certain tract of land nigh the Township of Lynn, in the county of Essex, in this His Majesty's territory and dominion, out of fence and undivided, containing about five hundred acres, commonly called Nahant neck, for which your petitioner humbly prays His Majesty's grant, and that your Excellence would please to issue a warrant to the Surveyor-General to admeasure the same, in order to passing a patent, he paying such moderate quitrent as your Excellence shall please to direct, &c.

‘ ED. RANDOLPH.’

On the reception of this modest petition, the Council, on Friday, the third of February, directed the constables to ‘ Give public notice in the said town of Lynn, that, if any person or

persons have any claim or pretence to the said land, they appear before his Excellency, the Governor, in Council, on Wednesday, the seventh of March next, then and there to show forth the same, and why the said land may not be granted to the petitioner.' In pursuance of this order, the constable, John Edmunds, notified a town meeting, which was held on the fifth of March, when a committee was chosen, who made the following representation.

'To his Excellency, Sir Edmund Andros, Knight, and our Honorable Governor, with his Honorable Council to sit with him, on Wednesday, the seventh of this instant March, 1688.

'Having received an order upon the second day of this instant March, that orders our constables of Lynn, or either of them, to give public notice in the said town of Lynn, of a petition of Mr. Edward Randolph, Esq., read in a council held in Boston, on the third day of February, 1688, praying His Majesty's grant of a certain tract of land, therein called vacant land, lying nigh the town of Lynn, called Nahant, &c., as also, that, if any person or person have any claim or pretence to the said lands, they appear before his Excellency, in council, on Wednesday, the seventh of this instant March, to show forth the same, and why the said land may not be granted to the petition, &c.

'Wherefore, we, the proprietors of the pasture of Nahant, and inhabitants of Lynn, have, in obedience to our present Honorable Governor and his Honorable Council, presented before them as followeth.

Imprimis: Our humble and most thankful acknowledgment of the favor showed unto us, in giving us notice of such an enterprise, as whereby, should it take effect, would so extremely indamage so many of His Majesty's good subjects at once; whereby we conclude his Excellency, our Honorable Governor, and his Honorable Council, are such as will search for and do justice, and maintain the cause of the innocent, weak, and poor, as we humbly and sincerely acknowledge ourselves to be; and yet being clearly satisfied of our just right in the tract of lands petitioned for, have good hope our honorable rulers will, of clemency and justice, adhere to, hear and weigh reasons herein presented, why we cannot comply with Mr. Edward Randolph's petition for the alienation of our Nahants; which, we humbly conceive, is groundlessly represented to be a parcel of vacant land, and therefore must apply ourselves to demonstrate to our Honorable Governor, and his Honorable Council, the contrary. And although the time is very short indeed for us to lay before your Honors to vindicate our just right to our Nahants, yet our endeavours shall be as effectual as we can in so short a time as we have to bethink ourselves, and show your Honors, that it is not vacant land, and that the proprietors have a true and



just right thereunto, wherefore we present your honors as followeth.

‘ That we have in our records, that in the year 1635, this tract of land, viz. our Nahants, was in the hands of the freemen of Lynn to dispose of; who did then grant unto several inhabitants to plant, and build upon, and possess; and, if they did not perform the conditions, they, to whom it was so granted, forfeited the land to the town again, to dispose as shall be thought fit; and among those to whom these lands were granted, that worthy and honorable gentleman, Mr. Humphreys, was one, who was a patentee and an assistant in the first government; therefore, sure it was the town’s land then.

‘ That these inhabitants that did build and dwell there, they were tributaries, or tenants, and paid their yearly rent to the town as long as they lived, or were removed by the town; as to instance, one *Robert Coates* yet living to testify it.

‘ There have been some that have laid a claim to this land called Nahant, and commenced suit at law with the town for it, but were cast at law, the Court that then was gave the town the case, justified the town’s right, and never denied it, nor blamed them about it.

‘ This tract of land, it hath been divided into planting lots to the several proprietors by a vote of the town, as appears in our records, Anno, 1656, and the whole fenced as a common field, and the lots been improved by the proprietors, in planting, tilling, and manuring; and afterward, by the agreement of the proprietors, converted into a pasture; and so, ever since to this day improved; so we have by hard labor and industry subdued it, and brought it into so good a capacity as it is at this day, for the town’s future benefit and no other.

‘ We have honestly purchased said tract of land with our money, of the original proprietors of the soil, viz. the Natives, and *have* firm confirmation thereof, under their hands and seals, according to law.

‘ We have possessed and improved the said tract of land upwards of fifty years, for so long since it hath been built upon, inhabited by tenants paying their acknowledgments year after year.

‘ We hope arguments of this nature will be swaying with so rational a commonwealth’s man as Mr. Randolph, who hath ever pretended great respect to His Majesty’s subjects among us, and an earnest care and desire to promote their welfare and prosperity. The premises considered, we believe a gentleman, under such circumstances, will not be injurious, by seeking a particular benefit, to impoverish and disadvantage so many of His Majesty’s good subjects, by seeking the alienation of such a tract of land, so eminently useful and needful for those propri-

etors now in possession of it—it being a thing so consistent with His Majesty's pleasure, that his subjects should enjoy their properties and flourish under his government.

'We are confident, therefore, that this Honorable Council will be solicitous for the promoting our welfare, as not to suffer us to be impoverished by the alienation of such a considerable tract of land, as this will do, if it should be alienated,—yea, we are bold to say again, extremely prejudicial, if not impoverish the body of the inhabitants of Lynn, who live not upon traffic and trading, as many seaport towns do, who have greater advantages, but upon husbandry, and raising such stocks of cattle and sheep as they are capable, and as their outlands will afford; for this, our Nahant is such a place for us as God and nature hath fitted and accommodated with herbage; and likewise, the only place about us for security for our creatures from the teeth of ravening wolves; which, this last summer, as well as formerly, have devoured very many that fed in other places about us, to the very great damage of sundry of our inhabitants accordingly. Therefore, the said tract of land hath been improved by the proprietors as a grazing field with great benefit to the body of the whole town, which otherwise would be exposed to great hardships, inconveniences, and difficulties, to obtain a poor living; and, therefore, we cannot but be deeply sensible, that, if the said pasture be alienated from us, our poor families will be very great sufferers, and we shall be rendered very incapable, either to provide for them, or to contribute such dues and duties to His Majesty's government set over us, which otherwise we might be capable of, and shall always readily and carefully attend unto our utmost capacity.

'And we humbly trust, our Honorable Governor and his Honorable Council will show us the favor, as in their wisdoms, to weigh and consider well our dutiful application to their order, to give in and show our reasons why we claim this said tract of land to be our right, as not to suffer any alienation of that which we do so much need for our great comfort and benefit; but rather grant us further confirmation thereof, if need require.

'And thus we, the proprietors of the tract of land, even our Nahant, that is petitioned for, have taken notice of your Honors' order, and have, this first day of March, 1687–8, made choice of a committee, to consider what is meet to lay before your Honors, and of messengers, to appear and present the same to your Excellency, our Honorable Governor, and the Honorable Council; which, if these things are not satisfactory, we then in humility crave the favor of His Excellency and his Honorable Council for such a trial and process as the law may admit of in such a case, wherein persons are in possession of lands, as we of this said tract, having tenants there-



on; and further time and opportunity being granted, we doubt not but we shall produce such valid confirmations of our true and honest title to said tract of land, as shall be abundantly satisfactory to our honored rulers, and put a period to further debates about it. So we rest and remain, His Majesty's most loyal subjects, and your Excellency's and Council's most humble servants, The Committee, in the name and behalf of the Proprietors of Nahant.

‘ THOMAS LAUGHTON,  
RALPH KING,  
JOHN LEWIS,  
OLIVER PURCHIS,  
JOHN BURRILL,  
EDWARD RICHARDS,  
JOHN FULLER.’

It may appear strange to many, at this time, to notice the humble and almost abject demeanor of the committee, as evinced in the preceding address. They doubtless thought, that nothing would be lost by soft words; but the spirit of freemen was at length roused, and ample vengeance was soon to be taken on the aggressors of arbitrary power. Notwithstanding the representation of the committee, Mr. Randolph persisted in his demand, and renewed his claim as follows.

‘ To His Excellence, Sir Edmund Andros, Governor. The humble representation of Edward Randolph sheweth: That having, by his humble petition to your Excellence, prayed a grant of a certain tract of land lying in the township of Lynn, in the county of Essex, called Nahant, your Excellence was pleased, by your order in Council, the third day of February last, to direct that the constables of the said town do give public notice to the said town, that, if any person or persons have any claim or pretence to the said land, they should appear before your Excellence in Council, on Wednesday, the seventh of this instant March; at which time several of the inhabitants of the said town of Lynn did appear, and presented your Excellence with a paper, containing their several objections to the said petition.

‘ In answer whereto, is humbly offered as follows: That by their said prayer, it does not appear the lands petitioned for, or any part thereof, were disposed of to the inhabitants of Lynn, nor that the said town of Lynn was incorporated in the year 1635, nor at any time since, and so not endowed with a power of receiving or disposing such lands.

‘ That the freemen of Lynn, mentioned in the first article of their said paper, were not freemen of the corporation of Lynn, (as they would insinuate,) but inhabitants only in the township, and were admitted by the General Court to be freemen of

the Colony, with power to elect magistrates, etc., and their town of Lynn is equal to a village in England, and no otherwise.

‘And in regard their whole paper contains nothing more material than what is expressed in their first article, the petitioner hath nothing further to offer, than to pray your Excellence’s grant according to his petition. All which is humbly submitted.

‘ED. RANDOLPH.’

On the reception of this petition, the people of Lynn held another meeting, and addressed the Governor as follows.

‘To His Excellency, Sir Edmund Andros, Knight, our Honorable Governor, Captain-General of his Majesty’s Territory and Dominion in New England, the humble address of the inhabitants of Lynn is humbly offered.

‘We, whose names are subscribed, having, by the favor of your Excellency, good information of the endeavours of some to seek the alienation of a tract of land from us, called the Nahants, containing about four or five hundred acres, which will prove extremely prejudicial and injurious to the body of His Majesty’s subjects among us ; it being a tract of land honorably purchased of the natives, the original proprietors of the soil, and possessed by our predecessors and ourselves near upon sixty years, and to this day. We have also *renewed* confirmations of the tract of land by *firm deed* from the successors of the ancient proprietors, the natives ; having also been at great cost and charges, and hard labor for the subduing of the said land, to bring it into so good a capacity as it is in at this day ; having also defended our right to this tract of land as well as others possessed by us, by *blood* and *the loss of many lives*, both formerly, and especially in the late engagements, with the barbarous pagans. The said tract of land having been built upon, also, and *inhabited* upwards of fifty years. It hath been ploughed, planted, tilled, and manured, and fenced in ; the fence remaining to this very day, only wanting reparation ; none ever, to this day, from the first settlement of our plantation — called formerly by the name of Sawgus — dispossessing of us ; but we have maintained our possession and right, which hath been owned and defended by His Majesty’s former government set over us. The said tract of land being also eminently beneficial and needful for the support of our inhabitants ; it being improved for a grazing field for our sheep, and such other useful creatures as can scarcely be preserved from the ravening wolves.

‘Therefore, we are sensible, that, by the alienation of such a tract of land from us, so circumstanced, many of His Majesty’s good subjects, — our honest, innocent neighbors, — will be exposed to great sufferings and hardships, and we all rendered incapable to contribute such dues and duties to His Majesty’s govern-



ment set over us, as is our bounden duty, and which we shall always readily attend, knowing how consistent it is with His Majesty's pleasure, and how well pleasing to your Excellency, that we live and prosper under your government.

'We request your Excellency, therefore, to condescend to cast a favorable aspect upon the premises, and that our mean and shattered condition may not induce your contempt, but rather obtain your pity and succour. And, therefore, we confide in your Excellency's favor for our encouraging answer to this our petition, which is for the further and future enjoying of our Nahants.

'By your Excellency's fatherly and compassionate grant of such a patent for further confirmation thereof unto ourselves and heirs forever, upon a moderate acknowledgment to be paid to His Royal Majesty, as may be consistent with your Excellency's prudence, and most conducive to our best behoof and benefit, and so that we may live and prosper under your government, that we may have tranquility under the same from henceforth.

'The second day of April, Anno Domini, One Thousand Six Hundred Eighty and Eight. *Annoqui Regni Regis Jacobi Secundi Quarto.*'

The above petition was signed by seventy-four inhabitants, and, with the preceding papers, are preserved in the Massachusetts archives. Their interesting nature has induced me to give them entire. I have only corrected the spelling.

The revenge which had been burning in the breasts of the eastern Indians for twelve years, for their friends killed and sold into slavery in 1676, this year broke out into open war. Their animosity was increased by the instigation of Baron de St. Castine, a Frenchman, who married a daughter of Madockawando, the Penobscot Chief. His house had been plundered by Sir Edmund Andros, the Governor of Massachusetts, and and this induced him to join with the Indians. The French of Canada also united with them in their depredations, which were continued with intervals till 1698, under the appellation of Castine's war. A company of soldiers from Lynn were impressed, by order of the Governor, and sent out against the Indians, in the depth of winter. One of the soldiers from Lynn, Mr. Joseph Ramsdell, was killed by them at Casco Bay, in 1690.

**1689.** The assumptions of Andros and his lordly secretary, as may well be supposed, gave great offence to the people of Lynn, and there seems to have been no other general topic of conversation for several years. At length the spirit of the people was roused to such a degree, that, on the nineteenth of April, the inhabitants of Boston rose in arms, wrested the power from Sir Edmund, and confined him a prisoner on Fort Hill until he was sent back to England.

The people of Lynn, who had not only been injured, but even insulted by Governor Andros, united with some from other towns, and went up to Boston, under the command of Rev. Jeremiah Shepard, the minister of Lynn. A writer who was present says: 'April 19th, about 11 o'clock, the country came in, headed by one Shepherd, teacher of Lynn, who were like so many wild bears; and the leader, mad with passion, more savage than any of his followers. All the cry was for the Governor and Mr. Randolph.'\* The Lynn people were doubtless somewhat excited, but it may be noted, that the above account of their conduct was written by a friend of Governor Andros.

In the exigency of public affairs, town meetings were held, and a Committee of Safety for the county of Essex appointed, with directions to make a report of grievances, to be laid before the government. The people of Lynn made the following representation.

'At Lynn, the 24th of May, 1689, upon a signification from Captain Jonathan Corwin, of the Committee of the County of Essex, to make inquiry into the grievances suffered under the late government, that it is expressed, that this town, or any inhabitants therein, that have been aggrieved or burthened, do manifest the same under their hand, to the Committee aforesaid, or to Captain Jonathan Corwin to make known the same. We the Committee, chosen by the inhabitants of Lynn, on the 20th of May, 1689, to consider of the signification abovesaid, and to draw up what grievances and burdens we have sustained by the late government, &c., do declare, viz. that this poor town of Lynn have sustained great wrong and damage by the said late government; in that our orderly, honest, and just rights, in a tract of land within the bounds of Lynn, called Nahants, that hath been enjoyed, possessed, built upon, and improved, by fencing, planting, and pasturing, &c., by the township of Lynn, *well onward to sixty years*; and yet, by the injurious, unjust, and covetous humors of some very ill minded persons, upon petitions preferred, — as Mr. Randolph first, and Mary Daffin, of Boston, in the second place, when Mr. Randolph could not make his petition true and valid, then he throweth in Mary Daffin her petition for the same lands, and as unjustly founded as Mr. Randolph's. But on their two petitions and vain pretences, we, the poor people of Lynn, have been, by orders from the Governor and Council, called, summoned, and ordered to appear at Boston, and to show and make good title to said lands before Sir Edmund Andros, and his Council, at one sitting, and a second

---

\* This interesting passage, probably written by Randolph himself, was copied from a manuscript Account of the Insurrection, among the papers of the Archbishop of Canterbury, in the Lambeth Palace, at London.



sitting, and so a third, and a fourth, to our great loss, and expense of time and moneys, and no advantage nor benefit to us, because of delays and procrastinations, to screw our moneys out of our hands, and to make us pay, with a vengeance, for such writings as we must be constrained to take forth. And thus we have been grieved and oppressed, and put to loss, cost, and damage, near one hundred pounds, and never the better, no justice done us, and at last put upon a threatened necessity of patenting our own old enjoyed properties, and a denial of our rights in any of our commons, always enjoyed, but now called King's lands, and we denied to be any town. Thus we have been perplexed, vexed, and oppressed, and impoverished; and except the Lord had wrought for us, whose name we bless, and give thanks to the worthy gentlemen, his instruments, we had been the worst of bondmen. Furthermore, we were debarred, by the late government, of our constant liberty of town meetings but once in a year, whereby we could not meet to consult of defending our rights in the premises, because it should be charged with riot; and also of keeping a watch for our security from any dangers we had too just cause to fear, which was our great grief and burthen; and our abuses by the profane farmers of excise; and our sons, neighbors, and servants impressed and sent out so remote in the winter season, and constrained hereunto, and all sufferings, and we understand not upon what grounds. Per order of, or in the name of the Town and Committee.

OLIVER PURCHIS, *Cleric.*

‘Jeremiah Shepard, aged forty-two years, and John Burrill, aged fifty-seven years, we, whose names are subscribed, being chosen by the inhabitants of Lynn, in the Massachusetts Colony, in New England, to maintain their right to their properties and lands, invaded by Sir Edmund Andros's government, we do testify, that, (beside Sir Edmund Andros his unreasonable demands of money, by way of taxation, and that without an assembly and deputies, sent from our towns, according to ancient custom, for the raising of money and levying of rates,) our properties, our honest, and just, and true titles to our land were also invaded; and particularly a great and considerable tract of land, called by the name of the Nahants, the only secure place for the grazing of *some thousands* of our sheep, and without which our inhabitants could neither provide for their families, nor be capacitated to pay dues or duties for the maintenance of the public, but, if dispossessed of, the town must needs be impoverished, ruined, and rendered miserable. Yet this very tract of land, being petitioned for by Edward Randolph, was threatened to be rent out of our hands, notwithstanding our honest and just

pleas for our right to the said land, both by alienation of the said land to us by the original proprietors, the natives, to whom we paid our moneys by way of purchase, and notwithstanding near sixty years peaceable and quiet possession, and improvement, and also enclosure of the said land by a stone wall; in which tract of land, also, two of our patentees were interested in common with us, viz. Major Humfrey and Mr. Johnson; yet Edward Randolph petitioning for the said land, Sir Edmund, the Governor, did so far comply with his unreasonable motion, that we were put to great charges and expense for the vindication of our honest rights thereto. And being often before the Governor, Sir Edmund, and his Council, for relief, yet could find no favor of our innocent cause by Sir Edmund; notwithstanding our pleas of purchase, ancient possession, enclosure, grant of General Court, and our necessitous condition; yet he told us that all these pleas were insignificant, and we could have no true title, until we could prove a patent from the king; neither had any person a right to one foot of land in New England, by virtue of purchase, possession, or grant of court; but, if we would have assurance of our lands, we must go to the king for it, and get patents of it. Finding no relief, (and the Governor having prohibited town meetings,) we earnestly desired liberty for our town to meet to consult what to do in so difficult a case and exigency, but could not prevail; Sir Edmund angrily telling us, that there was no such thing as a town in the country; neither should we have liberty so to meet; neither were our ancient records, as he said, which we produced for our vindication of our title to the said lands, worth a rush. Thus were we from time to time unreasonably treated, our properties, and civil liberties, and privileges invaded, our misery and ruin threatened and hastened, till such time as our country, groaning under the unreasonable heavy yoke of Sir Edmund's government, were constrained forcibly to recover our rights and privileges.

‘ JEREMIAH SHEPARD,

‘ JOHN BURRILL.’

**1690.** The third inhabitant of Nahant, and the first permanent one, was James Mills. He had a small cottage, which stood in the field a few rods southeast from Whitney's hotel, wherein he resided twenty-six years. He had three children: Sarah, born February 27, 1675; James, born October 11, 1678; and Dorothy, born April 21, 1681. A bay on the south of Nahant having been her favorite bathing place, is called Dorothy's cove.

The first monthly meeting of the Society of friends in Lynn, was held at the house of Samuel Collins, on the 18th of July. There were but five Lynn men present.



**1691.** Lieutenant John Burrill was chosen Representative 'to the great and generall court.' The pay of a representative was three shillings a day.

Mr. John Burrill, junior, was chosen Town Clerk, in which office he continued thirty years.

April 14. 'Clement Coldam and Joseph Hart were chosen cannoners, to order and look after the great guns.'

July 13. Lieutenant John Fuller was chosen Clerk of the Writs. It is thus evident, that this office was not the same as that of Town Clerk.

On the northern shore of Nahant is a ledge of rock, which contains a portion of iron. Some of it was smelted in the foundry at Saugus, and more was taken for the forge at Braintree. 'It was voted, that Mr. Hubbard, of Braintree, should give three shillings for every ton of Rock Mine that he has from Nahant, to the town, for the town's use, and he to have so much as the town sees convenient.'

Mr. William Bassett was Quarter Master in the militia, and collector of the parish taxes. People who held offices were generally better known by their titles, than by their first names.

December 21. At a meeting of the Selectmen, 'Mr. Shepard, with his consent, was chosen Schoolmaster for the year ensuing.' Town Records.

**1692.** January 8. 'It was voted, that Lieutenant Blighe should have liberty to set up a pew in the north east corner of the meeting house, by Mr. King's pew, and he to maintain the windows against it.

'The town did vote, that Lieutenant Fuller, Lieutenant Lewis, Mr. John Hawkes, senior, Francis Burrill, Lieutenant Burrill, John Burrill, junior, Mr. Henry Rhodes, Quarter Master Bassett, Mr. Haberfield, Cornet Johnson, Mr. Bayley, and Lieutenant Blighe, should set at the table.

'It was voted, that Matthew Farrington, senior, Henry Silsbee, and Joseph Mansfield, senior, should set in the deacon's seat.

'It was voted, that Thomas Farrar, senior, Crispus Brewer, Allen Breed, senior, Clement Coldam, Robert Rand, senior, Jonathan Hudson, Richard Hood, senior, and Sergeant Haven, should set in the pulpit.

'The town voted, that them that are surviving, that was chosen by the town a committee to erect the meeting-house, and Clerk Potter to join along with them, should seat the inhabitants of the town, in the meeting house, both men and women, and appoint what seats they shall set in; but it is to be understood, that they are not to seat neither the table, nor

the deacon's seat, nor the pulpit, but them to set there as are voted by the town.'

'The town voted that Mr. Shepard should have liberty to remove Mr. Shepard's pew, and to set it adjoining at the eastward end of the pulpit.'

Lieutenant John Lewis, Cornet Samuel Johnson, John Witt, Joseph Breed, Thomas Farrar, junior, Joseph Newhall, and John Burrill, junior, were chosen Selectmen, 'to order the prudential affairs of the town.' These were the first Selectmen of Lynn whose names are recorded in the town book.

'The town voted, that the persons undernamed, in answer to their petition, should have liberty of the hindmost seat in the gallery to set in, and fit it up as well as they please, in the northeast corner, provided they do no damage in hindering the light of the window. Sarah Hutchins, Mary Newhall, Rebeckah Ballard, Susannah Collins, Rebeckah Collins, Ruth Potter, Jane Ballard, Sarah Farrington, Rebeckah Newhall, Elizabeth Norwood, Mary Haberfield.' T. R.

The year 1692 has been rendered memorable in the annals of our country, by the great excitement and distress occasioned by imputed Witchcraft. It was an awful time for New England — superstition was abroad in her darkest habiliments, scourging the land, and no one but trembled before the breath of the destroyer, for no one was safe. It seemed as if a legion of the spirits of darkness had been set free from their prison house, with power to infect the judgment of the rulers, and to sport, in their wanton malice, with the happiness and the lives of the people. The stories of necromancy in the darkest ages of the world — the tales of eastern genii — the imaginary delineations of the poet and the romancer — wild, and vague, and horrible as they may seem — fall far short of the terrible realities, which were performed in the open daylight of New England. The mother at midnight pressed her unconscious children to her trembling bosom — and the next day she was standing before a court of awful men, with her life suspended on the breath of imagination — or barred within the walls of a prison, and guarded by an armed man, as if she were a thing to be feared — or swinging in the breeze between earth and sky, with thousands of faces gazing up at her, with commingled expressions of pity and imprecation. The father, too, returned from his work at eve, to his peaceful household — and in the morning he was lying extended on a rough plank — with a heavy weight pressing on his breast — till his tongue had started from his mouth — and his soul had gone up to Him who gave it — and all this, that he might be made to confess an imaginary crime.

The alarm of witchcraft commenced in February, in the house of Rev. Samuel Parris, of Salem, with an Indian girl named



Tituba. Thirteen women and five men were hung, and two, Rev. George Burroughs and Giles Corey, pressed to death, because they would not answer or confess. More than one hundred others were accused and imprisoned, of whom the following belonged to Lynn :

1. Thomas Farrar was brought before the court, at Salem, May 18, and sent to prison at Boston, where he was kept until November 2, more than five months. He was an elderly man, and his son, Thomas Farrar, jun., was one of the Selectmen this year. He lived in Nahant street, and died February 23, 1694.

2. Sarah Bassett was tried at Salem, May 23, and sent to Boston prison, where she was kept until December 3, seven months. She was a daughter of Richard Hood, and wife of William Bassett, junior, in Nahant street. She had a young child, 22 months old, which she took with her to prison. The next daughter which she had after her imprisonment, she called 'Deliverance.'

3. Mary Derick, widow of Michael Derick, was carried to Boston prison, May 23, and kept there seven months. She was a daughter of William Bassett, senior.

4. Elizabeth Hart was arraigned and sent to Boston, May 18, where she was imprisoned until December 7; nearly seven months. She was an old lady, the wife of Isaac Hart, and died November 28, 1700.

5. Thomas Hart, son of Elizabeth Hart, in a petition to the court, October 19, says 'he has been in prison ever since May, for imputed witchcraft, and prays to be released.'

6. Sarah Cole, the wife of John Cole, was tried at Charlestown, the first of February, 1693, and acquitted.

7. Elizabeth Proctor, wife of John Proctor, of Danvers, was a daughter of William Bassett. She was condemned to death, but was released on account of her peculiar circumstances. Her husband was executed.

That aged people, as some of those were, and respectable as they all were, should have been subjected to long imprisonment and the danger of death, on the accusation of a few hoyden girls of uncertain reputation, influenced by wild malice, or a distempered imagination, is a matter which now excites our wonder and pity. My readers will doubtless be anxious to know what was said about the accused from Lynn. It is really too trifling for a serious record, and only merits notice for its consequences. The following is the testimony against Thomas Farrar:

'The deposition of Ann Putnam, who testifieth and saith; that on the 8th of May, 1692, there appeared to me the apperishion of an old gray head man, with a great nose, which tortured me, and almost choaked me, and urged me to writ in his

book; and I asked him what was his name, and from whence he came, for I would complain of him; and people used to call him old father pharaoh; and he said he was my grandfather, for my father used to call him father; but I told him I would not call him grandfather, for he was a wizzard, and I would complain of him, and ever since he hath afflicted me by times, beating me, and pinching me, and almost choaking me, and urging me continually to writ in his book.'

The testimony against Elizabeth Hart was as follows: 'The deposition of Mary Wolcott, who testifieth and saith, that on the 13th of May, 1692, I saw the apparition of Goody Hart, who hurt me much by pinching and choaking of me; and urged me grievously to set my hand to her book, and several other times she has tormented me, ready to tare my body in pieces.'

There were several other depositions, but these were the most important; yet on evidence like this, respectable people were taken from their homes, and imprisoned more than half a year. It is some satisfaction to know, that some of the judges and jurymen afterward saw their error and regretted it. Some restitution was also made, by the court, to some of the sufferers. Mary Derick was allowed £9, being at the rate of six shillings a week during her imprisonment, and £5, for her goods lost; and Sarah Bassett was also allowed £9.

The first thing which opened the eyes of the prosecutors, and tended to put a stop to accusations, was the 'crying out' against the Rev. Jeremiah Shepard, minister of the church at Lynn, as a wizzard! Every body saw the absurdity of the charge, and the court were convinced that if the matter proceeded much farther, themselves might not be safe.

In reflecting on this subject, it should be remembered, that people at that time generally believed in witchcraft. It was part of their religion, and under such a misconception of scripture, the slightest indications were proof. The more absurd, improbable, and even impossible a thing was, the more certain it appeared — for many people very wisely conclude, that no one would assert an impossibility, unless it were true! We wonder at the delusion of those days — but is there no mist before our eyes at present?

**1694.** The society of Friends having increased, Mr. Shepard became alarmed at their progress, and appointed the nineteenth of July, as a day of fasting and prayer, 'that the spiritual plague might proceed no further.'

At a town meeting on the twenty-fifth of July; 'The constables personably appearing, and declaring that they had all warned their several parts of the town, according to their warrants, and so many being absent from said meeting; the town did then



vote and give power to Jacob Knight, in behalf of the town, to prosecute against any and every person or persons, that has not attended this meeting, according to the bye-laws, or town orders.'

The practice prevailed for many years, of warning out of the town, by a formal mandamus of the selectmen, every family and individual, rich or poor, who came into it. This was done to exonerate the town from any obligation to render support in case of poverty. One old gentleman, who had just arrived in town, to whom this order was read, took it for a real intimation to depart. 'Come wife,' he says, 'we must pack up. But there — we have one consolation for it — it is not so desirable a place!'

**1695.** The property of the Nahants which had been a cause of contention from the first settlement of the town, were this year claimed by the heiresses of Richard Woody, of Boston; into whose claim they probably descended by a mortgage of one of the sagamores, in 1652. At a town meeting, on the eighteenth of October, 'There being a summons read, wherein was signified that the lands called Nahants were attached by Mrs. Mary Daffern of Boston, and James Mills summoned to answer said Daffern at an inferior court, to be holden in the county of Essex on the last Tuesday of December, 1695; the town did then choose Lieutenant Samuel Johnson, Joseph Breed, and John Burrill, junior, to defend the interests of the town in the lands called Nahants, and to employ an attorney or attorneys, as they shall see cause, in the town's behalf, against the said Daffern, and so from court to court, till the cause be ended — they or either of them — and the town to bear the charge.'

The following is transcribed from the records of the Quarterly Court, December thirty-first.

'Mrs. Mary Daffern and Mrs. Martha Padishall, widows, and heiresses of Richard Woodey, late of Boston, deceased, plaintiffs, versus John Atwill, junior, of Lynn, in an action of trespass upon the case, &c., according to writ, dated 30th September, 1695. The plaintiffs being called three times, made default, and are nonsuited. The judgment of the court is, that plaintiffs pay unto the defendants costs.' This is the last we hear of any claim made upon the Nahants, as individual property.

**1696.** January 13. 'The Selectmen did agree with Mr. [Abraham] Normenton to be Schoolmaster for the town, for the year ensuing; and the town to give him five pounds for his labor; and the town is to pay twenty-five shillings towards the hire of Nathaniel Newhall's house to keep school in, and the said Mr. Normenton to hire the said house.'

Immense numbers of great clams were thrown upon the

beaches by storms. The people were permitted, by a vote of the town, to dig and gather as many as they wished for their own use, but no more; and no person was allowed to carry any out of the town, on a penalty of twenty shillings. The shells were gathered in cart loads on the beach, and manufactured into lime.

This year, two Quakers, whose names were Thomas Farrar and John Hood, for refusing to pay parish taxes, suffered nearly one month's imprisonment at Salem.

The winter of this year was the coldest since the first settlement of New England.

**1697.** On the eighth of January, the town, by vote, set the prices of provisions, to pay Mr. Shepard's salary, as follows: Beef, 3d.; pork, 4d. a pound. Indian corn, 5s.; barley, barley malt, and rye, 5s. 6d; and oats, 2s. a bushel.

The blackbirds had to keep a bright look out this year, as the whole town were up in arms against them.

March 8. 'The town did vote, that every householder in the town should, some time before the fifteenth day of May next, kill or cause to be killed, twelve blackbirds, and bring the heads of them; at or before the time aforesaid, to Ebenezer Stocker's, or Samuel Collins's, or Thomas Burrage's, or John Gowing's, who are appointed and chose by the town to receive and take account of the same, and take care this order be duly prosecuted; and if any householder as aforesaid shall refuse or neglect to kill and bring the heads of twelve blackbirds, as aforesaid, every such person shall pay three pence for every blackbird that is wanting as aforesaid, for the use of the town.'

**1698.** On the fourth of January, Oliver Elkins and Thomas Darling killed a wolf in Lynn woods. On the twenty-eighth of February, Thomas Baker killed two wolves. This year also, James Mills killed five foxes on Nahant. Twenty shillings were allowed by the town for killing a wolf, and two shillings for a fox.

The town ordered that no person should cut more than seven trees on Nahant, under a penalty of forty shillings for each tree exceeding that number.

June 1. The court enacted 'that no person using or occupying the feat or mystery of a butcher, currier, or shoemaker, by himself or any other, shall use or exercise the feat or mystery of a Tanner, on pain of the forfeiture of six shillings and eight pence for every hide or skin so tanned.' They also enacted that no Tanner should exercise the business of a butcher, currier, or shoemaker. 'And no butcher shall gash or cut any hide, whereby the same shall be impaired, on pain of forfeiting twelve pence for every gash or cut.' It was also enacted that no



‘shoemaker or cordwainer shall work into Shoes, Boots, or other wares, any leather that is not tanned and curried as aforesaid; nor shall use any leather made of horse’s hide for the inner sole of any such shoes or boots on pain of forfeiting all such shoes and boots.’

**1699.** The platform of the meeting-house was covered with lead. The bell was taken down, and sent to England to be exchanged for a new one. Mr. Shepard’s salary was reduced to sixty pounds.

On the seventh of November, the town ordered that any person who should follow the wild fowl in the harbor, in a canoe, to shoot at them, or frighten them, should pay twenty shillings; and Thomas Lewis and Timothy Breed were chosen to enforce the order.

**1700.** On the twenty-fifth of May, Mr. John Witt killed a wolf.

At a meeting of the Selectmen on the seventh of June, Mr. Shepard was chosen to keep a grammar-school; for which thirty pounds were the next year allowed.

**1702.** On the sixteenth of March, Mr. Walter Phillips killed a wolf.

On the fourteenth of December, ten pounds were allowed for the maintenance of a grammar-master; ‘and such master to have, over and above the said ten pounds, 2 pence per week for such as are sent to read, 3 pence per week for them that are sent to write and cipher, and 6 pence per week for them that are sent to learn Latin, to be paid by parents and masters that send their children or servants to learn as aforesaid.’

**1704.** This year another war was prosecuted with the French and Indians, called Queen Anne’s War. It was begun by the Indians in the preceding year, and was productive of the most dreadful cruelty. Several of the soldiers from Lynn were taken prisoners. It continued about a year.

Colonel Benjamin Church, who commanded in this expedition, wrote a letter to Governor Dudley, requesting, ‘That four or five hundred pair of good Indian shoes be made; and let there be a good store of cow-hides, well tanned, for a supply of such shoes, and hemp to make thread, and wax, to mend and make more such shoes when wanted, and a good store of awls.’

On the sixth of March, the town, ‘being informed that several persons had cut down several trees or bushes in Nahants, whereby there is like to be no shade for the creatures,’ voted that no person should cut any tree or bush there, on a penalty of ten shillings.

## CHAPTER IX.

Nahant and Woodlands divided — The Great Snow — Hon. John Burrill — The Cold Winter — John Adam Dagyr, the Shoemaker — Notices of Ministers ; Shepard, Sparhawk, Whitefield, Cheever, Chase, Henschman. 1706 to 1764.

There is a tear for all who die,  
A mourner o'er the humblest grave ;  
But nations swell the funeral cry,  
And triumph weeps above the brave.

BYRON.



NAHANT, and the great range of woodland in the north of the town, had from the first settlement, been retained in common. The same spirit of practical democracy which had influenced the people at the beginning, was carried out through all their public affairs. Nahant was used as a common pasture, where any one who chose, put cattle and sheep, which were tended by a person, chosen and paid by the town, called a shepherd. In like manner the great woodlands had been reserved for common use, and the people cut their fuel in such quantities as they pleased in the woodlands nearest their dwellings. If any required timber for building, they selected the fine old oaks that plumed the craggy cliffs, and the tall straight trunks which grew in the dark pine forests, to make into boards at the saw mill. But now the people had so increased, and the limits of their cultivated lands became so permanently established, that they concluded it would be best to have some more definite regulations for their government in future.

**1706.** On the fifteenth of April, a town meeting was held, when it was resolved to make a division of the public lands, only reserving the training field, which is now called the Common. They chose a committee of three persons from other towns, to make the division, whom they directed to allow each proprietor at least one-fourth upland, and as near his own house as might be. The committee were Captain Samuel Gardner of Salem, John Greenland of Malden, and Joseph Hasey of Chelsea.



‘ We whose names are hereunto subscribed, having been chosen by the Towne Lyn, at a Towne Meeting held April 15th, 1706, as a committee to Divide all the Undivided Common Lands within the Towne of Lyn, aforesaid, by such rules, and in such way and manner as shall be agreed upon by us; we having agreed and made Division of the Common Undivided Lands too and amongst all the proprietors and Inhabitants that have land of their own in fee, according to said Towne Voate, so far as appeared to us. The way and manner of our Division, and that which we have agreed upon to make our rules by, are as followeth.

‘ We first obtained of the Selectmen of said Lyn, a copy of the List of Estate taken by them in 1705, which list being first perfected and made intelligible to us by the Selectmen, through our desire, by their bringing each person’s land to the Right owner, and by adding such to said List, that by Reason of poverty, or others being in captivity, had been left out of said List, that soe we might come to the knowledge of all the proprietors and Inhabitants that have Lands of their owne in fee; we having made division of the aforesaid Common Lands according to what each proprietor and Inhabitant have of Lands upon said List.

1. ‘ We first taking out, according to the best Information we could obtaine, all such as had houses erected since the year 1694, who are priviledged for so much and no more than what each person hathe of Lands upon said List.

2. ‘ A second Rule by which we make division is, that all such as have upon said List foure acres of Land or any Less quantity, to have priviledg for five acres; and all such as have five acres to have privildg for six acres; and all such as have six acres to have privildg for seven acres; and all such as have seven acres to have privildg for eight acres; and no person to receive advantage any further for any more than for what they have upon said List.

3. ‘ A third Rule of our Division is, that all such as have upon said List any greater number of acres than eight, till they come to twenty acres, counting two acres of pasture land for one of tillige Land; we finding them to be Rated but half soe much for pasture Land as for tillige or Improved Lands; are priviledged according to the number of acres they have on the List.

4. ‘ A fourth Rule is, that all those that have above twenty acres upon said List, until they come to thirty acres, shall receive privildg but for one-fourth part of all they have above twenty acres; and for what land any person hathe on said List above thirty acres, shall receive priviledg but for one eighth part of what is above thirty acres.

5. ‘ And whereas we, the aforesaid Committe, according to

said Towne voate, are to Leave convenient ways in all places, as we shall think fitt, we have agreed that, by reason of the Impossibility of making highways passable, if Laid upon the Range Lines, Doe therefore order, that all the propriators concerned, their heirs and assigns forever, to have free Liberty to pass and Repass over each person's Lotts, that is laid out by us on the commons, with carts and teams, to transport wood, timber and stones, or upon any other ocation whatsoever, in such places as may be convenient, without any molestation, hindrance, or Interruption from any of the propriators, their heirs or assigns, but no person to Damnifie his neighbor by Cutting Downe his tree or trees.

' We have left a highway over *Little Nahant* two poles wide on the west end, and soe Runing over the beach unto *Great Nahant*; and soe on the southwardly side of the hill to about ten pole above the Calf Spring, and running slanting up the hill into the old way, and soe runing on the northeast end of James Mills his land, and soe on to the first Range in the ram pasture; and have left about one acre of land joining to the highway by the Spring, to accomidate Cattle coming to the Spring. We have also left a highway, two pole wide from the highway by the Spring, ouer into Bass neck, and soe through the Ranges to the southermost Range on said neck. We have also left a highway, two pole wide, on the Bay side, over to Bass neck, and so ouer Mr. Taylor's lott, Joseph Jacob's lott, and Moses Hudson's Lott, unto the other highway; and have left a highway one pole wide over the westward end of each Range on great Nahant; and a highway one pole wide, one the northwardly end of each Range on Bass neck; and a highway one pole wide ouer between the range of lots, halfe a pole on each Range, on each side of the Range Line on Little Nahant.

' Thus we make Returne of this our Doings, this first Day of January, 1706-7.

SAMUEL GARDNER,  
JOHN GREENLAND,  
JOSEPH HASEY.'

On the 28th September, ' The towne considering the great difficulty of laying out highways on the common lands, by reason of the swamps, hills, and rockenes of the land, theirfore voated, that after said common lands shall be divided, every person interested therein, shall have free liberty at all times, to pass and repass over each others' lotts of lands, to fetch their wood and such other things as shall be upon their lands, in any place or places, *and for no other ends*, provided they do not cut downe any sort of tree or trees in their so passing over.' Eleven persons entered their dissent to this vote, but do not state whether



it was against the privilege, or its limitation. Men frequently want to pass on to their lots for other purposes than to fetch wood; and in many places in the woods, if they had not cut down a tree, it would have been utterly impossible ever to have gone upon their lots at all with a carriage. If this vote were a law, many proprietors on Nahant even now, could not go upon their lands to plant or build. But the warrant for calling this meeting is unrecorded.

The Common Lands were laid out by the committee in 'Seven Divisions.' The First Division began on the west of Saugus river, including what was called the six hundred acres, which were then in Lynn. The Second Division ran across the northern part of the town, and the Seventh Division was Nahant.

There is no record that the report of the committee was accepted, though it probably was, as it was recorded, with all the separate lots and owners' names. The woodlands and the Nahants were laid out in Ranges, forty rods in width, and these were divided into lots, containing from about one eighth of an acre to eight acres. Many of these lots were afterward subdivided among heirs, so that many lots on Nahant are now six hundred and sixty feet long, and from two feet to eight feet wide. This renders it impossible in many places to obtain a building lot, without purchasing of many owners. Several lots are as narrow as two feet and three inches, and for each of these a separate deed must be written. I have constructed a complete map of Nahant on a very large scale, on which the lots are shown with the names of the original proprietors and the present owners.

**1712.** That part of the town now called Lynnfield, was set off as a parish, or district, on the seventeenth of November. The inhabitants were to be freed from parish taxes, as soon as a meeting-house should be built, and a minister settled. The people of Lynnfield, in the town records, are called 'our neighbors, the farmers.'

This year, all the shells, which came upon the Nahant beaches, were sold by the town, to Daniel Brown, and William Gray, for thirty shillings. They were not to sell the shells for more than eight shillings a load, containing forty-eight bushels, heaped measure. The people were permitted to dig and gather the clams as before, but they were required to open them on the beach, and leave the shells. The house in which I was born, was plastered with lime made from these shells.

**1713.** Mr. John Merriam was employed as schoolmaster. The school was called a grammar school, because Latin was taught in it. The other studies were reading, writing, and

ciphering. English grammar was not a common study, and no book on that subject was introduced into general use, till about seventy years after this time. No arithmetic was used by the scholars, but the master wrote all the sums on the slate. No spelling book was used. The reading books were the New Testament, and the Psalms of David — the translation of which is found in the Prayer Book of the church.

**1715.** The first meeting-house in the second parish, now Lynnfield, was built. When the building of the first parish meeting-house was in contemplation, the people of the northern part of the town, being obliged to travel six or eight miles to meeting, wished to have the house placed in a central situation, and a committee was appointed to 'chuse' a place. They selected a hill, now included in the bounds of Saugus, which was thence called Harmony Hill. It was afterward determined to place the house on the Common, and the people of Lynnfield continued to attend meeting there till this year.

**1716.** A gentleman whose name was Bishop, was school-master. Mr. Ebenezer Tarbox was chosen, by the town, as Shepherd. Three porches were added to the first parish meeting-house; and a curiously carved and panelled oak pulpit, imported from England, was set up.

**1717.** Two great storms, on the twentieth and twenty-fourth of February, covered the ground so deep with snow, that people for some days could not pass from one house to another. Old Indians, of an hundred years, said that their fathers had never told them of such a snow. It was from ten to twenty feet deep, and generally covered the lower story of the houses. Cottages of one story were entirely buried, so that the people dug paths from one house to another, under the snow. Soon after, a slight rain fell, and the frost crusted the snow; and then the people went out of their chamber windows, and walked over it. Many of the farmers lost their sheep; and most of the sheep and swine which were saved, lived from one to two weeks without food. One man had some hens buried near his barn, which were dug out alive eleven days after. During this snow, a great number of deer came from the woods for food, and were followed by the wolves, which killed many of them. Others were killed by the people with guns. Some of the deer fled to Nahant, and being chased by the wolves, leaped into the sea, and were drowned. Great damage was done to the orchards, by the snow freezing to the branches, and splitting the trees as it fell. This snow formed a remarkable era in New England; and old people, in relating an event, would say that it happened so many



years before or after the great snow. Hon. John Winthrop says: 'We lost at the island and farms above 1100 sheep, beside some horses and cattle interred in the snow; and it was very strange, that 28 days after the storm, the inhabitants of Fisher's Island, in pulling out the ruins of 100 sheep, out of the snow bank in the valley, where the snow had drifted over them sixteen feet, found two of them alive in the drift, which had lain on them all that time, and kept themselves alive by eating the wool off the others.' The mail was nine days in reaching Portsmouth, and eight in returning.

The town tax this year was £237. Mr. Shepard's salary was eighty-seven pounds; and the rest was for the school, and other town debts.

It was in one of the great storms this year, that Samuel Belamy's pirate ship, the *Whidah*, of 23 guns and 130 men, was wrecked on Cape Cod, and more than one hundred dead bodies were found on the shore. Six of the survivors were afterwards executed at Boston.

This year Nahant was again without an inhabitant; James Mills being dead, and his family removed. His house and land became the property of Dr. John Henry Burchsted, who, on the eighteenth of December, sold it to Samuel Breed. He built a house where Whitney's Hotel now stands. He was very small in stature, and was generally called 'Governor Breed.' He was born November 11, 1692, married Deliverance Bassett, June 25, 1720, (the same who was mentioned as a child in 1692,) and had five children; Anna, Sarah, Huldah, Nehemiah, and William. His house became the property of his son, Nehemiah, and his grandson William, by whom it was rebuilt in 1819. For twenty-four years this house was kept as a Hotel, by Jesse Rice; and was purchased, in 1841, by Albert Whitney.

Jabez Breed, brother of Samuel, soon after removed to Nahant and built a house directly opposite. A few years afterward, Richard Hood exchanged his house in Nahant street for this. He married Theodate Collins, May 20, 1718, and had eight children; Theodate, Jedediah, Content, Rebecca, Hannah, Patience, Abner and Abigail. His descendants still live at Nahant on the estate of their ancestor.

The third house on Nahant was built by Jeremiah Gray, a carpenter, and uncle of Lieutenant Governor William Gray. This house, about the year 1770, was sold to Jonathan Johnson, and is now occupied by his son Caleb Johnson.

These were the only three houses on Nahant until the year 1803. Their occupants were Quakers, and kept no taverns, but accommodated a few boarders, in the summer, and occasionally made a fish chowder, for parties who visited Nahant from Boston and other places.

**1718.** In the beginning of this year, Mr. Shepard was unwell; and a gentleman, whose name was Townsend, was employed to preach five sermons; for which the town paid him fifty shillings. The Selectmen, on the fifth of March, were directed to employ a schoolmaster; and in their agreement with him, 'to have relation to some help for Mr. Shepard in preaching.'

According to tradition — which may not very safely be relied on in matters of importance, though it may assist in delineating manners and customs, it was about this time that potatoes were first introduced into Lynn. Mr. John Newhall received two or three, which he planted; and when he gathered the produce, a few of them were roasted and eaten, merely from curiosity; and the rest were put into the shell of a gourd, and hung up in the cellar. The next year he planted them all, and had enough to fill a two bushel basket. He knew not what to do with so many, and gave some of them to his neighbors. Soon after, one of them said to him: 'Well, I have found that potatoes are good for something. I had some of them boiled, and ate them with fish, and they relished very well.' It was several years after this, before potatoes came into general use, and then only in small quantities. A farmer, who kept a very particular account of every day's employment, first mentions 'patatas,' as a common article, in 1733.

At this time, tea was little used, and teakettles were unknown. The water was boiled in a skillet; and when the ladies went to visiting parties, each one carried her teacup, saucer, and spoon. The teacups were of the best china, and very small, containing about as much as a common wine glass. Coffee did not come into use until many years after.

**1719.** The northern lights were first mentioned this year, on the seventeenth of December. The people were much alarmed at their appearance. The northern hemisphere seemed to be on fire; and it is said that the coruscations were distinctly heard, like the rustling of a silken banner.

**1720.** The Rev. Jeremiah Shepard was the fourth son of the Rev. Thomas Shepard, minister of Cambridge; who came from Towcester, in England, in 1635. His mother, who was his father's third wife, was Margaret Boradile. He was born at Cambridge, August 11th, 1648; and graduated at Harvard College in 1669. He was the first minister of Lynn, who was born and educated in America. His brother Thomas was minister of Charlestown, and his brother Samuel minister of Rowley. In 1675, he preached as a candidate at Rowley, after the death of his brother; and in 1678, at Ipswich. He came to Lynn in



1679, during the sickness of Mr. Whiting; and was ordained on the sixth of October, 1680. He was admitted a freeman in the same year. He resided, at first, in the street which has been called by his name; and afterward built a house, which was burnt down, on the north side of the Common, a little distance eastward from Mr. George Brackett's. In 1689, he was chosen representative to the general court; and this is perhaps the only instance in the early history of New England, in which a minister of the gospel sustained that office. He died on the 'third' of June, 1720, aged seventy-two; having preached at Lynn forty years.

The life of Mr. Shepard was distinguished by his unvaried piety. He was one of those plain and honest men, who adorn their station by spotless purity of character; and has left a name to which no one can annex an anecdote of mirth, and which no one attempts to sully by a breath of evil. He was indefatigable in his exertions for the spiritual welfare of his people; but his dark and melancholy views of human nature tended greatly to contract the circle of his usefulness. It is the practice of many who attempt to direct us in the way of truth, that, instead of laying open to us the inexhaustible stores of happiness, which the treasury of the Gospel affords — instead of drawing aside the veil which conceals from man's darkened heart the inexpressible joys of the angelic world, and inducing us to follow the path of virtue, from pure affection to Him who first loved us — they give unlimited scope to the wildest imaginations that ever traversed the brain of a human being, and plunge into the unfathomable abyss of superstition's darkness, to torture the minds of the living by stirring up the torments of the dead, and driving us to the service of God, by unmingled fear of his exterminating wrath. It is not requisite for the prevalence of truth, that we should be forever familiar with the shadows that encompass it. The mind may dwell upon darkness until it has itself become dark, and callous to improvement — or reckless and despairing of good. That Mr. Shepard's views of human nature, and of the dispensation of the Gospel, were of the darkest kind, is evident from the sermons which he has left; and these opinions unfortunately led him to regard the greater part of the christian world as out of the way of salvation, and to look upon the crushed remnant of the red men as little better than the wild beasts of the forest. In alluding to the mortality, which prevailed among the Indians in 1733, he says that, 'The Lord swept away thousands of those salvage tawnies, those cursed devil worshippers.'

His writings exhibit occasional gleams of genius and beauty; but they are disfigured by frequent quotations from the dead languages, and by expressions inconsistent with that nobleness of sentiment, and purity of style, which should be sedulously

cultivated by the young. It was the custom in his time, to prolong the sermon at least one hour, and sometimes it was extended to two; and a sand glass was placed on the pulpit to measure the time. In one of his sermons he alludes to this practice. 'Thou art restless till the tiresome glass be run out, and the tedious sermon be ended.' He published the following works:

1. 'A Sort of Believers Never Saved.' Boston, 1711, 12mo.
2. 'Early Preparations for Evil Days.' Boston, 1712, 24mo.
3. 'General Election Sermon.' Boston, 1715, 12mo.

The following epitaph was transcribed from his grave stone with much difficulty; having become nearly obliterated by the dilapidations of more than one hundred years.

'Elijah's mantle drops, the prophet dies,  
 His earthly mansion quits, and mounts the skies.  
 \* ————— So Shepard's gone.  
 His precious dust, death's prey, indeed is here,  
 But 's nobler breath 'mong seraphs does appear;  
 He joins the adoring crowds about the throne,  
 He 's conquered all, and now he wears the crown.'

The name of Mr. Shepard's wife was Mary. She died March 28, 1710, aged 53 years. He had nine children, 1. Hannah, born 1676, married John Downing of Boston, 1698. 2. Jeremiah, born 1677, died 1700. 3. Mehetabel, died 1688. 4. Nathaniel, born June 16, 1681, removed to Boston. 5. Margaret, died 1683. 6. Thomas, born August 1, 1687, died 1709. 7. Francis, died 1692. 8. John, married Alice Tucker, 1722. 9. Mehetabel second, married Rev. James Allin of Brookline, 1717.

Rev. Nathaniel Henchman, who had been invited, in February, to settle as a colleague with Mr. Shepard, was ordained minister of the first parish in December. His salary was £115; and he received £160, as a settlement. Twenty persons, 'called Quakers,' were exempted, some entirely and others in part, from the payment of parish taxes.

Rev. Nathaniel Sparhawk was ordained minister of the second parish, now Lynnfield, on the seventeenth of August. His salary was seventy pounds.

Mr. John Lewis was master of the Grammar School. The school was kept in four places; on the Common, at Wood End, in the west parish, and in the north parish.

**1721.** The general Court, of the preceding year, ordered fifty thousand pounds to be emitted in bills of credit. Of this, Lynn received £124, 4, as its proportion, which was loaned at five per cent. This money, which was afterward called Old

---

\* This line is thus on the monument.



Tenor, soon began to depreciate; and in 1750, forty-five shillings were estimated at one dollar.

The small pox prevailed in New England. In Boston more than eight hundred persons died. If the small pox of 1633 was a judgment upon the Indians, for their erroneous worship, was not this equally a judgment upon the inhabitants of Boston? Some men are very free in dealing out the judgments of God to their enemies, while they contrive to escape from the consequence of their own reasoning. If a misfortune comes upon one who differs from their opinions, it is the vengeance of heaven; but when the same misfortune becomes their own, it is only a trial. One might suppose that the observation of Solomon, that 'all things happen alike to all men,' and that still more pertinent remark of our Saviour, respecting the tower of Siloam, would teach men understanding. (Luke 13: 4.) But though he spoke so plainly, how many do not rightly understand the doctrine of that inimitable Teacher.

The Honorable John Burrill died of the small pox, on the tenth of December, aged 63 years. He was born on the fifteenth of October, 1658, and lived on the western side of Willis's hill. He married Mary Stowers of Chelsea, on the twenty eighth of July, 1680, and left no children. He was Town Clerk for thirty years, and was twenty one times elected Representative. He was Speaker of the House for several years, and at the time of his death was a Counsellor. He gained a reputation which few men who have since filled his stations, have surpassed. The purity of his character, and the integrity of his life, secured to him the warmest friendship of his acquaintance, and the unlimited confidence of his native town. He was affable in his manners, and uniformly prudent in his conduct. His disposition was of the most charitable kind, and his spirit regulated by the most guarded temperance. He willingly continued in the House many years, when he might have been raised to a more elevated office; and his thorough acquaintance with the forms of legislation, the dignity of his deportment, and the order which he maintained in debate, gave to him a respect and an influence, which probably no other Speaker of the House ever obtained. Governor Hutchinson, in his History of Massachusetts, compares him to the celebrated William Pitt, speaker of the English House of Commons. The following epitaph is on his grave stone.

'Alas! our patron's dead! The country — court —  
The church — in tears, all echo the report;  
Grieved that no piety, no mastering sense,  
No counsel, gravity, no eloquence,  
No generous temper, gravitating to  
Those honors, which they did upon him throw,  
Could stay his fate, or their dear Burrill save  
From a contagious sickness, and the grave.

The adjacent towns this loss reluctant bear,  
But widowed Lynn sustains the greatest share ;  
Yet joys in being guardian of his dust,  
Until the Resurrection of the Just.'

**1722.** Between the years 1698 and 1722, there were killed in Lynn woods, and on Nahant, four hundred and twenty eight foxes; for most of which the town paid two shillings each. In 1720, the town voted to pay no more for killing them, and the number since this time is unrecorded. We have also no account of the immense multitude which were killed during the first seventy years of the town. If these animals were as plenty in the neighborhood of Zorah, as they were at Lynn, Sampson probably had little difficulty in obtaining his alleged number.

**1724.** The eastern Indians recommenced their hostilities early in the spring. On the 17th of April they attacked a sloop from Lynn, lying at the mouth of Kennebunk river, commanded by Captain John Felt, of Lynn, who went there for a load of spars. He had engaged two young men, William Wormwood and Ebenezer Lewis to assist him. While standing on the raft, Captain Felt was shot dead. Lewis fled to the mill, when a ball struck him on the head and killed him instantly. The ball was afterward found to be flattened. Wormwood ran ashore, closely pursued by several Indians, and with his back to a stump defended himself with the butt of his musket, until he was killed by several balls. They were all buried in the field near Butler's rocks, and Captain Felt's grave stones were standing but a few years since.

**1726.** A ship yard was open at Lynn, where the wharves have since been built, near Liberty Square. Between this year and 1741, two brigs and sixteen schooners were built. Collins's Journal. It is said, that before the first schooner was launched, a great number of men and boys were employed, with pails, in filling her with water, to ascertain if she was tight.

**1727.** An earthquake happened on the twenty ninth of October, about twenty minutes before eleven, in the evening. The noise was like the roaring of a chimney on fire, the sea was violently agitated, and the stone walls and chimneys were thrown down. Shocks of earthquakes were continued for many weeks; and between this time and 1744, the Rev. Mathias Plant, of Newbury, has recorded nearly two hundred shocks, some of which were loud and violent.

The town, on the twenty second of November, fixed the prices of grain; wheat at 6s., barley and rye at 5s., Indian corn at 3s., and oats at 1s. 6d. a bushel.



**1728.** The general court having, the preceding year, issued sixty thousand pounds more, in bills of credit, the town received £130, 4, as its proportion, which was loaned at four per cent.

A school house was built in Loughton's lane, now Franklin street.

**1729.** A great snow storm happened on the fifteenth of February, during which there was much thunder and lightning.

The general court was held in Salem, on the twenty eighth of May, in consequence of the measles at Boston.

At the request of the first parish, Mr. Henchman<sup>r</sup> relinquished his salary of £115, trusting entirely to the generosity of the people for his support; in his own words, 'depending on what encouragement hath been given me, of the parish doing what may be handsome for the future.' At the end of the year, the contribution amounted to £143, 1, 4.

**1730.** On Sunday evening, April twelfth, there was an earthquake.

On Monday, August 24th, 'Governor Jonathan Belcher went through Lynn, and the people paid their respects to him in an extraordinary manner.' Collins.

On the thirty first, Mr. Andrew Mansfield was killed in a well, at Lynnfield, by a stone falling on his head.

On the twenty second of October, the northern lights appeared very brilliant and awful, flashing up in red streams.

**1731.** The Rev. Nathaniel Sparhawk was dismissed from the pastoral charge of the north parish, now Lynnfield, on the first of July, having preached eleven years. He was a son of Mr. Nathaniel Sparhawk of Cambridge. He was born in 1694, and graduated at Harvard College in 1715. He was ordained August 17, 1720; and died May 7, 1732; about one year after his separation from that church. A part of his people had become dissatisfied with him, and some, whom he considered as his friends, advised him to ask a dismission, in order to produce tranquillity. He asked a dismission, and it was unexpectedly granted. A committee was then chosen to wait on him, and receive the church records; but he refused to deliver them. Soon after, he took to his bed, and is supposed to have died in consequence of his disappointment. I have sixteen papers of his hand writing, being the confessions of faith of his wife and other members of his church. He married Elizabeth Perkins, who died May 12, 1768, aged 68 years. He had four children. 1. Elizabeth, 2. Nathaniel, 3. Edward Perkins Sparhawk, born July 10, 1728, and graduated at Harvard College in 1753. He

married Mehetabel Putnam, 1759. He was never ordained, though he preached many times in the parishes of Essex. I have twenty six of his manuscript sermons, and seventeen interleaved almanacs. He appears not to have approved the settlement of Mr. Adams as minister of the parish for which he was a candidate, and calls him 'old Adams, the reputed teacher of Lynnfield.' He is the first person whom I found in our records, having three names. The custom of giving an intermediate name seems not to have been common, till more than one hundred years after the settlement of New England. 4. John, born October 24, 1730, was apprenticed as a shoemaker, and afterward became a physician in Philadelphia.

Rev. Stephen Chase, of Newbury, was ordained minister of the second parish on the twenty fourth of November. His salary was one hundred pounds.

On the third of August, the school house was removed from Franklin street to Water Hill.

**1732.** On the fifth of September, there was an earthquake without noise. In October an epidemic cold affected most of the people in Lynn. It ranged through America, and passed to Europe. Collins.

**1733.** A settlement was begun at Amherst, in New Hampshire, by people from Lynn.

A memorandum respecting the town meeting, on the fifth of March, says: 'At this meeting we had a great debate and strife, so that the town was much in a hubbub.' Collins.

**1736.** The first meeting house in the third parish, now Saugus, was built this year. On the fourth of September, Thomas Hawkes was drowned.

**1737.** On Sunday, February 6th, there was an earthquake. Collins.

At this time, there were fourteen chaises, nine vehicles called chairs, and one calash, owned in Lynn.

Square toed shoes went out of fashion this year, and buckles began to be used.

**1738.** On the thirty first of March, two houses were burnt; one of which belonged to Mr. Edmund Lewis, and the other to Mr. John Hawkes. Mr. Richard Mower was schoolmaster. The town tax was £119 16s. 10d.

**1739.** On the third of March, Mr. Theophilus Burrill's barn was burnt.



Rev. Edward Cheever was ordained minister of the third parish, now Saugus, on Wednesday, the fifth of December.

Mr. Edmund Lewis and Mr. Ralph Lindsey, were chosen by the town, to enforce an act of the general court, to prevent the destruction of deer.

**1740.** A fatal disease, called the throat distemper, prevailed in Lynn, and many fell victims to it. In October, six children died in one week. Collins.

In a great snow storm, on the seventeenth of December, a schooner was wrecked on Nahant rocks.

The winter was exceedingly cold, with many storms. The rivers were frozen in October. Snow began to fall on Thanksgiving day, November thirteenth, and on the fourth of April following, it covered the fences. Collins.

**1741.** The winter of 1741, was perhaps the coldest ever known in New England, since its settlement. Francis Lewis, signer of the Declaration of Independence, drove his horse from New York to Barnstable, the whole length of Long Island Sound, on the ice!

‘For these 3 weeks we have had a continued series of extreme cold weather, so that our harbors and rivers are entirely frozen up. On Charles river a tent is erected for the entertainment of travellers. From Point Alderton along the south shore, the ice is continued for the space of above 20 miles.’ Boston Post Boy, Jan 12.

‘People ride every day from Stratford, Con. to Long Island, which is three leagues across, which was never known before.’ Boston News Letter, March 5.

‘We hear that great numbers of horses, cattle and sheep are famishing for want of food. Three hundred sheep have died on Slocum’s Island, and 3000 on Nantucket. Neat cattle die in great numbers.’ Some farmers offered half their cattle for the support of the rest till May, ‘but in vain.’ Same, March 26.

‘Dorchester, March 28. People from Thompson’s Island, Squantum, and the adjacent neighborhood, have come fifteen Sabbaths successively upon the ice to our meeting.’ Same, April 2.

A letter dated at New London; on the ninth of July, five days later than our day of Independence, says — ‘There is now at Lyme, on the east side of Connecticut river, at a saw mill, a body of ice, as large as two carts can draw, clear and solid, and I believe might lay there a month longer, were it not that so many resort, out of curiosity, to drink punch made of it.’ Same, July 27.

On the seventeenth of July, a mass of 'snow congealed into ice,' lay at Ipswich, 'nearly four foot thick.' Same, July 22.

A difference had existed for several years, between Mr. Henchman and his parish, in consequence of their refusal to make so large an addition as he desired to his salary, on which he declined to accept it. This year he offered to preach lectures to them gratuitously, for which he received their thanks, and an increase of his salary.

Great commotions were excited in the neighboring towns, by Mr. Whitefield's preaching. In some places, meetings were held almost every evening; and exhortations and prayers were offered by women and children, which had never before been done in New England.

On the eighteenth of February, the Winnesimet ferry boat was overset, and a Frenchman drowned.

**1742.** The Rev. George Whitefield preached in Lynn. An evening meeting on the eleventh of March, is thus noticed. 'This evening sundry young persons were struck, as they call it, in the religious manner. This is the first of so in our town.' Collins's Journal.

On the eighteenth of June, Mr. Nathaniel Collins's house was struck by lightning.

On the twelfth of October, Mr. Jonathan Norwood fell from a fishing boat, near Nahant, and was taken up dead. On the thirteenth of July, 1643, Mr. Moses Norwood, of Lynn, was drowned at Boston.

**1744.** On Sunday morning, June third, there was an earthquake, sufficiently violent to throw down stone wall. It was repeated on the twentieth. Collins.

On the fourteenth, a small company of men were impressed, to be sent, with other troops from Massachusetts, against the French and Indians, who were making depredations on the northern frontier. The town was furnished with a stock of powder, which was stored in a closet, beneath the pulpit of the first parish meeting house.

On the thirty-first of December, Mr. Theophilus Merriam was found dead on the ice, on Saugus river.

**1745.** On the evening of March ninth, there was a night arch.

Rev. George Whitefield came to Lynn, on the third of July, and requested Mr. Henchman's permission to preach in his meeting-house, which was refused. Some of the people resolved that he should have liberty to preach; and taking the great doors from Mr. Theophilus Hallowell's barn, and placing them upon some barrels, they made a stage, on the eastern part



of the Common, from which he delivered his address. He also delivered a discourse, standing on the platform of the whipping post, near the First Parish meeting-house. After the first application and refusal, Mr. Henchman addressed a letter, in a printed pamphlet, to the Rev. Stephen Chase of Lynnfield, containing reasons for declining to admit Mr. Whitefield into his pulpit. Some of these reasons were, that Mr. Whitefield had disregarded and violated the most solemn vow, which he took when he received orders in the Church of England, and pledged himself to advocate and maintain her discipline and doctrine — that he had intruded into places where regular churches were established — that he used vain boasting, and theatrical gestures, to gain applause — that he countenanced screaming, trances, and epileptic fallings — that he had defamed the character of Bishop Tillotson, and slandered the colleges of New England. To this letter, Mr. William Hobby, minister of Reading, made a reply; and Mr. Henchman rejoined in a second letter. The controversy extended throughout New England, and many pamphlets were written, both for and against Mr. Whitefield. Some good seems to have been done by him, in awakening the people to a higher sense of the importance of piety; but seeking only to awaken them, and not to direct them to the Church, of which he was a minister, they were left to form new separations, and to build up other faiths.

**1746.** On the eighteenth of August, the corn was hurt by a frost.

A packet schooner, commanded by Captain Hugh Alley, passed from Lynn to Boston. It continued to sail for many years.

**1747.** The Rev. Edward Cheever relinquished his connexion with the second parish, of which he had been minister for eight years. He was a son of Mr. Thomas Cheever, of Lynn, and was born May 2, 1717. He graduated at Harvard College in 1737, and was ordained in 1739. He removed to Eastham, where he died, August 24, 1794, aged 77 years.

**1749.** The drought of this summer was probably never exceeded in New England. The preceding year had been unusually dry, but this was excessively so. There was but little rain from the sixth of May to the sixth of July. A memorandum in the eighteenth of July, by Collins, says: 'Extreme hot dry weather, such as has not been known in the memory of man — so scorched that the creatures can but just live for the want of grass.' The effects of the drought were so great, that hay was imported from England. Immense multitudes of grasshoppers

appeared. They were so plenty on Nahant, that the inhabitants walked together, with bushes in their hands, and drove them by thousands into the sea.

**1750.** John Adam Dagyr,\* a shoemaker, from Wales, came to Lynn. He was one of the best workmen for ladies' shoes, who had ever appeared in the town. At the time of his arrival, the business of shoemaking at Lynn was very limited, and the workmen unskilful. There were but three men who conducted the business so extensively as to employ journeymen. These were John Mansfield, Benjamin Newhall, and William Gray, grandfather of William Gray, Lieut. Gov. of Massachusetts. The workmen had frequently obtained good shoes from England, and taken them to pieces, to discover how they were made. By the instruction of Mr. Dagyr, they were soon enabled to produce shoes nearly equal to the best imported from England. Shoemakers, from all parts of the town, went to him for information; and he is called, in the Boston Gazette of 1764, 'the celebrated shoemaker of Essex.' He resided in that part of the town called Mansfield's End. He married Susannah Newhall, in 1761; and had three children, Caroline, Sarah, and Joseph. Like many who have consulted the public interest more than their own, he was poor, and died in the Lynn Alms House, in 1808.

On the night of July 2, Mr. Robert Mansfield's house, near the Flax pond, was struck by lightning.

**1751.** On the eighth of February, Captain Benjamin Blaney, of Swampscot, fell from his horse at Malden, and was taken up dead.

**1752.** Rev. Joseph Roby was ordained minister of the third parish, now Saugus, in August.

The school house was removed from Water Hill, to its former place in Franklin street, on the twenty-ninth of September; and on the twenty-seventh of November, it was again removed to the eastern part of the common.

The Selectmen were allowed two shillings a day for their services. Dr. Nathaniel Henchman was schoolmaster.

**1753.** Many sheep having been killed by wild animals, the people assembled on the sixth of August, and ranged through the woods, to kill the wolves and foxes. On the twenty-seventh, a great number of the inhabitants of Lynn, Salem, and Reading, met, and spent the day, in endeavoring to clear the forest of them.

---

\* A Welsh word, signifying a tear.



**1755.** A shop on the Common, belonging to Mr. Benjamin James, was burnt, on the fourth of February. On the twenty-fourth, a schooner, from Salem, was cast away on Short Beach, at Nahant. Collins.

On Sunday, April twenty-seventh, the Society of Friends, for the first time, had two meetings in one day. Collins.

Rev. Stephen Chase resigned the care of the second parish, now Lynnfield. He graduated at Harvard University, in 1728; and was ordained November 24, 1731. He married Jane Winget of Hampton, in 1732; and his children, born at Lynn, were, Abraham, Stephen, Jane, Stephen second, and Mary. He removed to Newcastle, in New Hampshire, where he settled and died.

Mr. Benjamin Adams was ordained minister of the second parish, on the fifth of November.

The greatest earthquake ever known in New England, happened on Tuesday, the eighteenth of November, at fifteen minutes after four, in the morning. It continued about four minutes. Walls and chimnies were thrown down, and clocks stopped. On the following Saturday there was another earthquake. Collins. On the first of this month Lisbon was destroyed.

A whale, seventy-five feet in length, was landed on King's Beach, on the ninth of December. Dr. Henry Burchsted rode into his mouth, in a chair drawn by a horse; and afterward had two of his bones set up for gate posts, at his house in Essex street, where they stood for more than fifty years.

In the eastern French and Indian war, Governor Lawrence of Nova Scotia sent to Massachusetts, in the course of two years, about 2000 French Catholic Neutrals, who were quartered in different places. Lynn had fourteen. Thomas Lewis supplied them with provisions; and among the items of his bill are 432 quarts of milk, at six pence a gallon. The war continued until 1763.

**1756.** The manuscript of Dr. John Perkins gives a long and particular relation of a singular encounter of wit, had between Jonathan Gowen of Lynn, and Joseph Emerson of Reading. They met, by appointment, at the tavern in Saugus, and so great was the number of people, that they removed to an adjacent field. The Reading champion was foiled, and went home in great chagrin. Dr. Perkins says that the exercise of Gowen's wit 'was beyond all human imagination.' But he afterward fell into such stupidity, that the expression became proverbial — 'you are as dull as Jonathan Gowen.'

**1757.** There was an earthquake on the eighth of July, at fifteen minutes after two of the clock. Collins.

On the sixth of February, two merchant vessels, from London, valued at one hundred thousand pounds, were wrecked on Lynn Beach.

On the afternoon of Sunday, August fourteenth, the people were alarmed, during meeting time, by the beating of drums; and on the next day, twenty men were impressed, and marched to Springfield. Pratt.

On the sixth of December, Lord Loudon's regiment, in marching through Woodend, took a boy named Nathaniel Low, living with Mr. Zaccheus Collins. His master followed the regiment into Marblehead, and on his solicitation, being a Quaker, the boy was released. This regiment had for some time been quartered in Boston, where Lord Loudon sported his coach and six horses. Collins.

**1758.** Thomas Mansfield, Esq. was thrown from his horse on Friday, January 6, and died the next Sunday.

A company of soldiers, from Lynn, marched for Canada, on the twenty-third of May. Edmund Ingalls and Samuel Mudge were killed.

In a thunder shower, on the fourth of August, an ox, belonging to Mr. Henry Silsbe, was killed by the lightning.

A sloop from Lynn, commanded by Captain Ralph Lindsey, was cast away, on the fifteenth of August, near Portsmouth.

**1761.** The Honorable Ebenezer Burrell was born on the thirteenth of July, 1679. He was representative from Lynn six years; and in 1731, and 1746, was chosen councillor. He was sent a commissioner to Casco Bay, to treat with the Indians, on the seventeenth of July, 1732; and returned on the fifth of August. He lived at Swampscot, at the place where Mr. Humfrey formerly resided; and died on the sixth of September, 1761, aged 82 years. He married Martha Farrington, by whom he had ten children.

The Rev. Nathaniel Henschman was a son of Mr. Nathaniel Henschman, a book-binder, and deacon of a church in Boston. He was born\* on the twenty-second of November, 1700; and graduated at Harvard University in 1717. He was ordained minister of the first parish in Lynn, in December, 1720. His residence was on the north side of the Common, where he built the house now owned by Mr. George Bracket. He died† on the twenty-third of December, 1761, aged 61; having preached forty-one years. In the early part of his ministry, Mr. Hensch-

---

\* Lynn Record, in the hand writing of Dr. Nathaniel Henschman, his son, Town Clerk. Some other records have a different date. † 'About one or two o'clock, in the morning.' Collins.



man enjoyed the esteem and confidence of his people. His learning was extensive, and his integrity and virtue entitled him to high respect. He was strongly attached to regularity and order, and disinclined to every species of enthusiasm. He thought the services of the Sabbath, in general, were sufficient, and was decidedly opposed to evening meetings. By his omitting to deliver lectures, and refusing to admit itinerant preachers into his pulpit, disaffections were created, which deprived him of the regard of many of his people. The occasion of these difficulties is to be imputed to the opinions of the time, rather than to any want of urbanity on the part of Mr. Henchman, who was very affable in his manners, and treated Mr. Whitefield with great civility and respect in his own house, and invited him to remain longer.\* He published the following pamphlets:

1. Reasons for Declining to Admit Mr. Whitefield into his Pulpit; addressed to the Rev. Stephen Chase of Lynnfield. Boston, 1744, 8vo.

2. A Letter to Rev. William Hobby of Reading, in Reply to his Vindication of Mr. Whitefield. Boston, 1745, 4to.

The following epitaph was written for Mr. Henchman.

Three times aloud the summons hath been blown,  
To call Lynn's watchmen to the highest throne.  
First Whiting left the church her loss to weep;  
Then Shepard next resigned his peaceful sheep;  
Our other shepherd now gives up his trust,  
And leaves his charge to slumber in the dust.  
A few fleet years, and the last trump will sound,  
To call our Henchman from the silent ground.†  
Then we who wake, and they who sleep must come,  
To hear the Judge pronounce the righteous doom.

Mr. Henchman had two wives; 1. Deborah Waker, in 1727, and, 2. Lydia Lewis, in 1734. He had five children. 1. Dr. Nathaniel, born April 1, 1728, graduated at Harvard University in 1747, was town clerk of Lynn for two years, and died May 30, 1767, aged 39. 2. Daniel. 3. Anna. 4. Lydia. 5. Anna.

On the twelfth of March, at twenty minutes after two, in the morning, there was an earthquake; and on the first of November, between eight and nine in the evening, another. Collins.

On the twentieth of April, John Stavers commenced running a stage from Portsmouth to Boston. It was a curricule, drawn by two horses, and had seats for three persons. It left Portsmouth on Monday morning, stopped the first night at Ipswich, and reached the ferry the next afternoon. It returned on Thursday morning, and reached Portsmouth on Friday. The fare was

\* Whitefield's Journal — Dr. Wigglesworth's Letter.

† The word 'henchman' signifies a warder or watchman.

thirteen shillings and six pence. This was the first stage in New England.

**1762.** The summer of this year was remarkably dry. On Wednesday, the twenty-eighth of July, a day of fasting and prayer was observed, in consequence of the drought; and on the Sunday following, there was a 'fine shower of rain.'

**1763.** Mr. John Treadwell was ordained minister of the first parish, on the second of March.

There was at this time in the town a man named Robert Bates, who had such a facility for rhyming that he usually made his answers in that manner. Many of these have been related, but I only notice one. The tax gatherer called on him one day, and addressed him thus: 'Mr. Bates, can you pay your rates?' to which he replied: 'My dear honey, I have no money; I can't pay you now, unless I sell my cow; I will pay you half, when I kill my calf; but if you'll wait till fall, I'll pay you all.'

**1764.** August 27. Mr. John Tarbox was drowned from a gondola, at the salt marsh.

December 28. Mr. Robert Wait was found dead on the marsh, near Saugus river.

The Boston Gazette, of October 21, says: 'It is certain that women's shoes, made at Lynn, do now exceed those usually imported, in strength and beauty, but not in price. Surely then it is expected, the public spirited ladies of the town and province will turn their immediate attention to this branch of manufacture.'





## CHAPTER X.

Stamp Act—Duty on Tea—Resolutions of the Town—Public Spirit of the Women—Battle of Lexington—Lynn Men Killed—Battle of Bunker Hill—Paper Money—Peace Proclaimed—Manners and Customs before the Revolution. 1765 to 1783.

When Freedom, from her mountain height,  
Unfurled her standard to the air,  
She tore the azure robe of night,  
And set the stars of glory there.

DRAKE.



AMONG the encroachments of the arbitrary power of the Mother Country, was the attempt to impose taxes upon the Colonies without their consent. Those taxes were at first levied in the form of duties; but the people objected to this incipient plan of raising a revenue for the support of a government in which they had no action, and their opposition eventuated in the establishment of their independence.

**1765.** This year an act was passed, by the Parliament of England, called the Stamp Act; requiring the people of the American Colonies to employ papers stamped with the royal seal, in all mercantile and legal transactions. This act called forth a general spirit of opposition, particularly in Boston; where, on the night of the twenty-sixth of August, a party of the people collected, and nearly demolished the house of Lieutenant Governor Hutchinson, and several others. In many other places the people manifested their displeasure, by tolling bells, and burning the effigies of the stamp officers.

**1766.** This year the stamp act was repealed. The people of Lynn manifested their joy by ringing the bell and making bonfires. On the first of December, they directed their representative, Ebenezer Burrill, Esquire, to use his endeavors to procure an act to compensate Mr. Hutchinson, and others, for their losses in the riot of the preceding year.

On Saturday, the eighth of February, an English brig, from Hull, was cast away on Pond Beach, on the south side of Nahant.

**1768.** On the seventh of November, John Wellman and Young Flint, were drowned in the Pines' river, and their bodies taken up the next day.

A Catamount was killed by Joseph Williams, in Lynn woods.

**1769.** A snow storm, on the eleventh of May, continued twelve hours.

On Wednesday evening, July nineteenth, a beautiful night arch appeared. It was widest in the zenith, and terminated in a point, at each horizon. The color was a brilliant white, and it continued most of the evening.

On the eighth of August, as a party were going on board a schooner in the harbor, for a sail of pleasure, the canoe, in which were six women and two men, was upset, and two of the party drowned. These were Anna Hood, aged 23, daughter of Benjamin Hood; and Alice Bassett, aged 17 years, daughter of Daniel Bassett.

In a great snow storm on the eighth of September, several buildings were blown down, and a sloop driven ashore at Nahant.

**1770.** After the repeal of the stamp act, the English Parliament, in 1767, passed an act imposing duties on imported paper, glass, paints, and tea. This again awakened the opposition of the colonies. The General Court of Massachusetts, in 1768, published a letter, expressing their firm loyalty to the king, yet their unwillingness to submit to any acts of legislative oppression. This letter displeased the English government, the General Court was dissolved, and seven armed vessels, with soldiers, were sent from Halifax to Boston, to ensure tranquillity. On the fifth of March, 1770, a part of these troops, being assaulted by some of the people of Boston, fired upon them, and killed four men. The soldiers were imprisoned, tried, and acquitted.

On the twelfth of April, the duties on paper, glass, and paints, were repealed; but the duty on tea, which was three pence on a pound, remained. On the twenty-fourth of May, the inhabitants of Lynn held a meeting, in which they passed the following resolutions.

'1. Voted, we will do our endeavor to discountenance the use of foreign tea.

'2. Voted, no person to sustain any office of profit, that will not comply with the above vote.

'3. Voted, no taverner or retailer shall be returned to sessions, that will not assist in discountenancing the use of said tea; and the selectmen to give it as a reason to the sessions.



‘4. Voted, unanimously, that we will use our endeavors to promote our own manufactures amongst us.’

The disaffection against the English government, appears to have been occasioned, not so much by the amount of the duty on the tea, as by the right which it implied in that government, to tax the people of America without their consent. The colonies had always admitted their allegiance to the English crown; but as they had no voice in parliament, it was ungenerous, if not unjust, in that parliament, to impose any taxes which were not necessary for their immediate benefit.

A great storm, on the nineteenth of October, raised the tide higher than had been known for many years.

**1771.** On the ninth of January, Mrs. Rebecca Hadley, wife of Mr. Thomas Hadley, of Lynnfield, left her house to visit an acquaintance, and did not return. On the twenty-sixth she was found, drowned in the stream above the mill-pond, into which she probably fell, in attempting to cross it.

**1772.** Mr. Sparhawk, of Lynnfield, in his diary, thus remarks: ‘An amazing quantity of snow fell in the month of March, such as I never knew in the time that I have lived.’ On the fifth of March, the amount of snow which fell, was 16 inches; on the ninth, 9 inches; on the eleventh, 8 inches; on the thirteenth, 7 inches; on the 16th, 4 inches; and on the twentieth, 15 inches. Thus the whole amount of snow, in sixteen days, was nearly five feet on a level.

A fishing schooner was wrecked on Long Beach, on the twenty-first of March, and Jonathan Collins and William Boynton, the only two men on board, were drowned.

On the fifteenth of May, Abigail Rhodes, a daughter of Mr. Eleazer Rhodes, was lost. On the twenty-fourth, a great number of people went in search of her, in vain. On the second of June, another general search was made; and on the twenty-first of July, her bones were found in a swamp near the Pirate’s Glen. There were strong suspicions of unfairness in regard to her death. She left a house in Boston street, in the evening, to return to a cottage in the forest, where she had been living, and was seen no more alive. Several persons were apprehended on suspicion, but as only circumstantial evidence was elicited, they were discharged.

**1773.** The opposition to the duty on tea continued unremitted. The East India Company sent many cargoes to America, offering to sell it at a reduced price; but the people resolved that it should not be landed. Seventeen men, dressed like

Indians, went on board the vessels in Boston harbor, broke open 342 chests of tea, and poured their contents into the water.

A town meeting was held at Lynn, on the sixteenth of December, in which the following resolutions were passed:

'1. That the people of the British American Colonies, by their constitution of government, have a right to freedom, and an exemption from every degree of oppression and slavery.

'2. That it is an essential right of freemen to have the disposal of their own property, and not to be taxed by any power over which they have no control.

'3. That the parliamentary duty laid upon tea landed in America, is, in fact, a tax upon Americans, without their consent.

'4. That the late act of parliament, allowing the East India Company to send their tea to America on their own account, was artfully framed, for the purpose of enforcing and carrying into effect the oppressive act of Parliament, imposing a duty upon teas imported into America; and is a fresh proof of the settled and determined designs of the ministers to deprive us of liberty, and reduce us to slavery.

'5. That we highly disapprove of the landing and selling of such teas in America, and will not suffer any teas, subjected to a parliamentary duty, to be landed or sold in this town; and that we stand ready to assist our brethren of Boston, or elsewhere, whenever our aid shall be required, in repelling all attempts to land or sell any teas poisoned with a duty.'

The tea fever raged very high at this time, especially among the ladies. A report having been put in circulation through the town, that Mr. James Bowler, who had a bake-house and a little shop, on Water Hill, had a quantity of tea in store, a company of women went to his house, demanded the tea, and destroyed it. This exploit was certainly as great a piece of patriotism on their part, as that performed in Boston harbor the same year, and deserves to be sung in strains of immortality. Slander, however, who is always busy in detracting from real merit, asserted that the women put on extra pockets on that memorable night, which they filled with the fragrant leaf, for their own private consumption.

A deer was this year started in the Malden woods, and chased by some hunters, through Chelsea, to the Lynn marsh. He plunged into the Saugus river, and attempted to gain the opposite shore; but some Lynn people, coming down the river in a boat, approached; and throwing a rope over his horns, brought him ashore at High Point.

**1774.** The destruction of the tea at Boston gave great offence to the English government, and an act was passed, by which the harbor of Boston was closed against the entrance or



departure of any vessels. The inhabitants of Lynn held several meetings, in which they expressed their disapprobation of the shutting of the port of Boston, and their abhorrence of every species of tyranny and oppression.

On the seventh of October, a congress of delegates from the several towns of Massachusetts, assembled at Salem, to consider the state of public affairs. The delegates from Lynn were Ebenezer Burrill, Esq., and Capt. John Mansfield. They made addresses to Governor Gage, and to the clergy of the province, chose a committee of safety, and recommended measures for the regulation of public conduct.

The night of October 25th was one of surpassing splendor. The northern lights cast a luminous night arch across the heavens, from the eastern to the western horizon.

**1775.** On the morning of Wednesday, the nineteenth of April, the inhabitants of Lynn were awakened, by the information that a detachment of about eight hundred troops, had left Boston, in the night, and were proceeding towards Concord. On receiving the intelligence that the troops had left Boston, many of the inhabitants of Lynn immediately set out, without waiting to be organized, and with such weapons as they could most readily procure. One man, with whom I was acquainted, had no other equipments than a long fowling-piece, without a bayonet, a horn of powder, and a seal-skin pouch, filled with bullets and buck shot. The English troops arrived at Lexington, a little before five in the morning, where they fired upon the inhabitants, assembled in arms before the meeting-house, and killed eight men. They then proceeded to Concord, where they destroyed some military stores; but being opposed by the militia, they soon began to retreat. The people from Lynn met them at Lexington, on their return; and joined in firing at them from the walls and fences. In one instance, says my informant, an English soldier, coming out of a house, was met by the owner. They levelled their pieces at each other, and firing at the same instant, both fell dead. The English had sixty-five men killed, the Americans fifty. Among these were four men from Lynn, who fell in Lexington.

1. Mr. Abednego Ramsdell. He was a son of Noah Ramsdell, and was born 11 September, 1750. He had two brothers, older than himself, whose names were Shadrach and Meshech. He married Hannah Woodbury, 11 March, 1774, and resided in the eastern part of Essex street. He had gone out early on that morning to the sea shore, with his gun, and had killed a couple of black ducks, and was returning with them, when he heard the alarm. He immediately threw down the birds, and set off. He was seen passing through the town, running in haste, with

his stockings fallen over his shoes. He arrived at Lexington about the middle of the day, and fell immediately.

2. Mr. William Flint. He married Sarah Larrabee, 5 June, 1770.

3. Mr. Thomas Hadley. His wife, Rebecca, was drowned, as mentioned in 1771.

4. Mr. Daniel Townsend. He was born 26 December, 1738. A stone has been erected to his memory, at Lynnfield, with the following inscription:

‘Lie, valiant Townsend, in the peaceful shades; we trust,  
Immortal honors mingle with thy dust.  
What though thy body struggled in its gore?  
So did thy Saviour’s body long before;  
And as he raised his own, by power divine,  
So the same power shall also quicken thine,  
And in eternal glory mayst thou shine.’

In the number of the wounded was Timothy Munroe, of Lynn. He was standing behind a house, with Daniel Townsend, firing at the British troops, as they were coming down the road, in their retreat toward Boston. Townsend had just fired, and exclaimed, ‘There is another redcoat down,’ when Munroe, looking round, saw, to his astonishment, that they were completely hemmed in by the flank guard of the British army, who were coming down through the fields behind them. They immediately ran into the house, and sought refuge in the cellar; but no cellar was there. They looked for a closet, but there was none. All this time, which was indeed but a moment, the balls were pouring through the back windows, making havoc of the glass. Townsend leaped through the end window, carrying the sash and all before him, and instantly fell dead. Munroe followed, and ran for his life. He passed for a long distance between both parties, many of whom discharged their guns at him. As he passed the last soldier, who stopped to fire, he heard the red coat exclaim, ‘Damn the Yankee! he is bullet proof—let him go!’ Mr. Munroe had one ball through his leg, and thirty-two bullet holes through his clothes and hat. Even the metal buttons of his waistcoat were shot off. He kept his clothes until he was tired of showing them, and died in 1808, aged 72 years. Mr. Joshua Felt was also wounded, and Josiah Breed was taken prisoner, but afterward released.

The war was now begun in earnest. On the 23d of April, the people of Lynn chose a committee of safety, to consult measures of defence. This committee consisted of Rev. John Treadwell, minister of the first parish, Rev. Joseph Roby, minister of the third parish, and Deacon Daniel Mansfield. A company of alarm men was organized, under the command of Lieutenant Harris Chadwell. Three watches were stationed each



night; one at Sagamore Hill, one at the south end of Shepard street, and one at Newhall's Landing, on Saugus river. No person was allowed to go out of the town without permission; and the people carried their arms to the place of public worship. Mr. Treadwell, always foremost in patriotic proceedings, appeared, on the Sabbath, with his cartridge box under one arm, and his sermon under the other, and went into the pulpit with his musket loaded.

On the 17th of June, was fought the memorable battle of Bunker Hill. The Lynn regiment was commanded by Colonel John Mansfield. The English, in this battle, lost two hundred and twenty-six men killed, and the Americans one hundred and thirty-nine.

Mr. John Lewis died this year, aged ninety-two. He lived on the place of his ancestors, in Boston street, and was for many years a deacon of the first parish. He owned the second tannery in Lynn, which was on the brook opposite his house. He was a gentleman extensively beloved and respected. He married Mary Burrill in 1715, and had five children. 1. Lydia, who married Rev. Nathaniel Henschman, in 1734. 2. Sarah. 3. Mary, who married Rev. John Carnes, in 1747. 4. Lois. 5. John, who was born 7 November, 1724; graduated at Harvard University in 1744; practised medicine; and died 21 October, 1754.

For many years the tavern in Saugus was kept by Zaccheus Norwood, and after his death, by his widow, who married Josiah Martin, who then became landlord, as tavern keepers were then called. In 1775, he enlisted in the war, and Mr. Jacob Newhall then took the tavern, which he kept through the Revolution, and until the year 1807. He died in 1816. He was a man very highly esteemed, and his house was considered the best, as it had always been the most noted, in Essex county.

**1776.** In January, the English troops were quartered at Boston, and the American, at Cambridge, separated by Charles river. It was the intention of General Putnam to cross over to Boston, as soon as the river should become sufficiently frozen. Three of his soldiers, one of whom was Mr. Henry Hallowell, of Lynn, hearing of this design, set out to try the strength of the ice, by throwing a large stone before them. A party of about fifty of the English soldiers, on the opposite shore, commenced firing at them; which they only regarded by mocking with their voices the noise of the bullets. They continued on the ice till the English party retired; when, thinking that they had gone to procure a cannon, they returned, after picking up more than seventy balls on the ice, which they presented to General Putnam, as trophies of their venturesome exploit. The soldiers from Lynn were under the command of Capt. Ezra Newhall.

On the 21st of May, the people of Lynn voted, that the ministers should be invited to attend the annual town meetings, to begin them with prayer. I was once at the meeting of a town in New Hampshire, in which this practice prevails, and was convinced of its propriety. There are occasions, on which prayer is made, which are of less apparent importance than the choice of men, to govern the town or commonwealth, and to make laws on which the welfare and perhaps the lives of the people may depend.

A company of soldiers was furnished for an expedition to Canada. On the 2d of August, the town allowed them fifteen pounds each, and voted that ten pounds should be given to any person who would voluntarily enlist.

An alarm was made, at midnight, that some of the English troops had landed on King's beach. In a short time the town was all in commotion. Many persons left their houses and fled into the woods. Some families threw their plate into the wells, and several sick persons were removed. Some self possession, however, was manifested. Mr. Frederick Breed, for his exertions in rallying the soldiers and marching them to Wood End, where he found the alarm to be false, received a commission in the army, and afterward rose to the rank of Colonel.

**1777.** Rev. Benjamin Adams was born at Newbury, in the year 1719, and graduated at Harvard University in 1738. He was ordained minister of the second parish, now Lynnfield, November 5, 1755; and died May 4, 1777, aged 58; having preached 21 years. He married Rebecca Nichols, and had seven children: Rebecca, Dr. Benjamin, Elizabeth, Sarah, Ann, Joseph and Nathan, (twins.)

In the winter of this year, John Lewis, aged 26, and Benjamin, aged 15, brothers, of Lynn, died on board the Jersey prison ship, in the harbor of New York. Their deaths were principally occasioned by severe treatment, and by unwholesome food prepared in copper vessels.

**1780.** The town of Lynn granted as much money as would purchase twenty-seven hundred silver dollars, to pay the soldiers. Within two years, the town granted seventy thousand pounds, old tenor, to defray their expenses. The principal money in circulation was the paper money issued by Congress, which had greatly depreciated. A soldier of the Revolution says, that, in 1781, he sold seventeen hundred and eighty dollars of paper money, for thirty dollars in silver.

The continental currency, as it was called, consisted of small pieces of paper, about two inches square. The one dollar bills had an altar, with the words, *depressa resurgit*, the oppressed



rises. The two dollar bills bore a hand, making a circle with compasses, with the motto, *tribulatio dital*, trouble enriches. The device of the three dollar bills was an eagle pouncing upon a crane, who was biting the eagle's neck, with the motto, *exitus in dubio*, the event is doubtful. On the five dollar bills was a hand grasping a thornbush with the inscription, *sustine vel abstine*, hold fast or touch not. The six dollar bills represented a beaver felling a tree, with the word *perseverando*, by perseverance we prosper. Another emission bore an anchor, with the words, *In te Domine speramus*, In thee, Lord, have I trusted. The eight dollar bills, displayed a harp, with the motto, *majora minoribus consonant*, the great harmonize with the little. The thirty dollar bills exhibited a wreath on an altar, with the legend, *si recte, facies*, if you do right, you will succeed. When I was a child, I had thousands of dollars of this uncurrent money given me to play with.

The 19th of May was remarkable throughout New England for its uncommon darkness. It began about the hour of ten in the morning. At eleven, the darkness was so great, that the fowls retired to their roosts, and the cattle collected round the barns, as at night. Before twelve, candles became requisite, and many of the people of Lynn omitted their dinners, thinking that the day of judgment had come. The darkness increased through the evening, and continued till midnight. It was supposed, by some, to have been occasioned by a smoke, arising from extensive fires in the western woods, and combining with a thick fog from the sea. The Rev. Mather Byles, of Boston, of punning memory, made a happy remark on this occasion. A lady sent her servant, in great alarm, to know if he could tell the cause of this great darkness. 'Tell your mistress,' replied he, 'that I am as much in the dark as she is!'

The winter of 1780 was the coldest since 1741.

At the commencement of the war, there were twenty-six slaves in Lynn: all of whom were made free this year. In 1675, there was a slave in Lynn, named Domingo Wight, who had a wife and two children. Another slave, in 1714, named Simon Africanus, had a wife and six children. Zaccheus Collins had four slaves, whose names were Pharaoh, Essex, Prince, and Cato. Prince was purchased at Boston, in 1746, for seventy-five dollars. In 1757, he married Venus, a slave to Zaccheus Gould. Joshua Cheever had a slave named Gift, whom he freed in 1756, at the solicitation of Hannah Perkins, who became his wife in 1745, on condition that he should free his slave at the age of twenty-five years. John Bassett had a slave, named Sampson, whom he liberated in 1776, because 'all nations were made of one blood.' Thomas Cheever had two slaves, Reading and Jane, who were married in 1760. Samuel Johnson had two

slaves, Adam, who married Dinah in 1766. Thomas Mansfield had two slaves, one of whom, named Pompey, had been a prince in Africa; and, after his liberation, lived in the forest on the east of Saugus river. For many years, the slaves in all the neighboring towns used to have a holiday allowed them once a year, to visit King Pompey; and doubtless this was to them a day of real happiness. On the little glade by the river side, the maidens gathered flowers to crown their old king, and the men talked of the happy hours they had known on the banks of the Gamba. Hannibal, a slave of John Lewis, was an example of the good effects which education and good treatment may produce in the colored people. He was brought from Africa when a boy, and was treated rather as a servant than a slave. He married Phebe, a slave of Ebenezer Hawkes. By the indulgence of his master, and by working extra hours, he earned enough to purchase the freedom of three children, at forty dollars each; but Phebe being a faithful slave, her master would not part with her short of forty pounds; yet, with a motive of hope before him, Hannibal was not to be discouraged, and in a few years her purchase was accomplished, and his own freedom was given to him. He married in 1762, and had three sons and six daughters. I have seldom known a more worthy family. Ebenezer Burrill had two slaves; Jedediah Collins, two; Joseph Gould, two; and James Philips, Samuel Burrill, Theophilus Burrill, Joseph Gaskins, Daniel Bassett, James Purinton, Ralph Lindsey, and Dr. Henry Burchsted, one slave each; being in all, with their children, about forty slaves.

Rev. Joseph Mottey was ordained minister of the Lynnfield parish on the 24th of September.

On the 29th of November there was an earthquake.

Dr. John Perkins, of Lynnfield, died this year, aged 85. His wife Clarissa died in 1749, and he wrote a poem on her death. He was a very eminent physician in his time, had studied two years in London, and practised physic forty years in Boston. In 1755, he published a tract on earthquakes; and also an essay on the small pox, in the London Magazine. He left a manuscript of 368 pages, containing an account of his life and experience, which is preserved in the library of the American Antiquarian Society.

**1782.** Rev. John Treadwell relinquished the care of the first parish this year. He was born at Ipswich, September 20, 1758; and was ordained at Lynn, March 2, 1763, where he preached nineteen years. He returned to Ipswich, and, in 1787, removed to Salem. He was representative of Ipswich and Salem, a senator of Essex county, and judge of the court of common pleas. In 1763, he married Mehitabel Dexter, a descendant of



Thomas Dexter, who bought Nahant. He had a son, John Dexter Treadwell, born at Lynn, May 29, 1768, who became a highly respected physician at Salem.

Mr. Treadwell was a great patriot, a member of the committee of safety, and foremost in all the proceedings of the town during the Revolution. It is perhaps somewhat of an anomaly in ethics, to find a minister of the gospel of peace bearing arms; but the British were obnoxious to dissenters, from an opinion that they wished to establish the church in America. There has always been a prejudice in New England against the Episcopal Church, but there is abundant evidence that a man may be a good churchman, and yet a true patriot. Washington and several other Presidents were members of the church, and some of our most distinguished military and naval heroes have been churchmen.

Mr. Treadwell was very fond of indulging in sallies of wit; and like his namesake in Shakspeare, he was not only witty in himself, but the cause of wit in other men. One Sunday, observing that many of his audience had their heads in a reclining posture, he paused in his sermon, and exclaimed, 'I should guess that as many as two thirds of you are asleep!' Mr. Josiah Martin, raising his head, looked round and replied: 'If I were to guess, I should guess there are not more than one half!' The next day, Mr. Martin was brought up for disturbing divine service; but he contended 'it was not the time of divine service; the minister had ceased to preach, and it was guessing time.' He was accordingly discharged.

Dr. Jonathan Norwood was a son of Mr. Zaccheus Norwood, born September 19, 1751, and graduated at Harvard University, 1771. He lived on the north side of the common. His death was occasioned by falling from his horse, on the night of the 18th of March.

**1783.** This year, the War, which had spread its gloom through the Colonies for seven years, was terminated by a treaty of peace, signed on the third of September; and the then Thirteen United States took their rank as an independent nation. The red cross banner of England was exchanged for a flag with thirteen stripes and thirteen stars; and Americans now regard the people of England, like the rest of mankind, — in war, enemies; in peace, friends.

With a few remarks respecting men and manners before the Revolution, we will take our leave of the olden time. People were then generally a plain, plodding, go-a-foot, matter-of-fact, sort of people. Rail-roads and steamboats had not even been thought of; the stage-coach and the omnibus were un-

known; and when something which was intended to answer the purpose of a coach at last appeared, it was a lumbering vehicle, drawn by two horses, passing through the town twice a week, in going to and returning from Boston. A few of the more wealthy farmers kept a chaise, or a chair, which was only 'tackled' on Sundays, or perhaps once a month for a journey to a neighboring town. People walked, without thinking it a trouble, from three to six miles on Sunday to meeting; the farmer rode on horseback, taking his wife behind him; and two or three spinsters of the family, or perhaps a young wife, followed in chairs placed in the horse-cart, — for a four-wheeled wagon was unknown in the town for more than one hundred and forty years after its settlement; and when Mr. Benjamin Newhall, about the year 1770, introduced the first ox wagon, it was humorously said, that his hired man had to drive down to the common to turn it. The physician made his visits on horseback, with his big saddle-bags on each side, stuffed with medicaments, — for an apothecary's shop was as rare as an opera house. There were no lectures, or lyceums, or libraries, or concerts in those days; there were few excitements, for people had not leisure to promote them; a reputation could not then be destroyed, as now, in a day, for they lived too remote for common slander, — but when the spirit of invective and evil, which had been confined for sixty years, did at length break forth, as in the time of witchcraft, it was as if a mountain lake should suddenly burst its cements of porphyry, uprooting the finest trees, and bearing boulders of granite through the cultivated valleys.

Gentlemen, in those days, wore hats with broad brims, turned up into three corners, with loops at the sides; long coats, with large pocket folds and cuffs, and without collars. The buttons were commonly plated, but sometimes of silver, often as large as half a dollar. Shirts had bosom and wrist ruffles; and all wore gold or silver shirt buttons at the wrist, united by a link. The waistcoat was long, with large pockets; and the neckcloth or scarf, of fine white linen, or figured stuff, brodered, and the ends hanging loosely on the breast. The breeches were usually close, with silver buckles at the knees. The legs were covered with long gray stockings, which on holydays were exchanged for black or white silk. Boots, with broad white tops; or shoes, with straps and large silver buckles; completed the equipment.

Ladies wore caps, long stiff stays, and high-heeled shoes. Their bonnets were of silk or satin, and usually black. Gowns were extremely long-waisted, with tight sleeves. Another fashion was, very short sleeves, with an immense frill at the elbow, leaving the rest of the arm naked. A large flexible hoop, three or four feet in diameter, was for sometime quilted into the hem of the gown, making an immense display of the lower person.

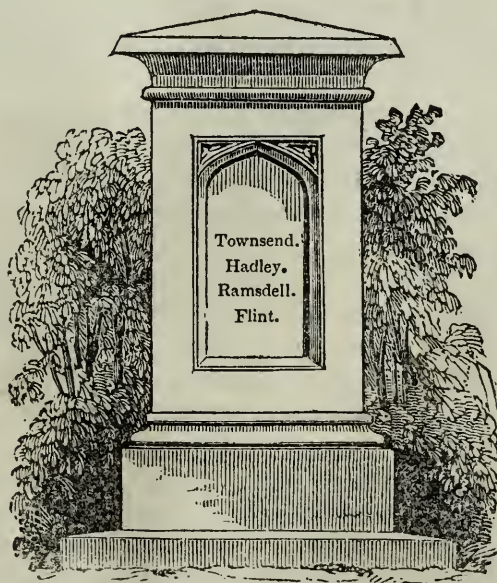


A long, round cushion, stuffed with cotton or hair, and covered with black crape, was laid across the head, over which the hair was combed back and fastened. It was almost the universal custom, also, for women, to wear gold beads, — thirty-nine little hollow globes about the size of a pea, strung on a thread, and tied round the neck. Sometimes this string would prove false to its trust, — at an assembly, perhaps, — and then, oh ! such a time to gather them up, before they should be trampled on and ruined !

Working women wore petticoats and half gowns, drawn with a cord round the waist, and neats' leather shoes ; though they generally throughout the country had a pair of 'Lynn shoes' for Sunday. Women did not 'go a-shopping' every day then ; there were few shops to go to, and those contained only such articles as were indispensable, and in very limited variety.

Those times had their benefits, but we would not wish their return. Nature brings not back the mastodon ; why, then, should we wish a recurrence of those gigantic days, which produced great men in proportion to great evils. That the men were more honest and generous, or the women more amiable and virtuous then, is not contended. The charm about them consists chiefly in this, that they lived in the early period of our history, — a period which will always be interesting — the records of which will be read with as much avidity a thousand years hence, as they are to-day.

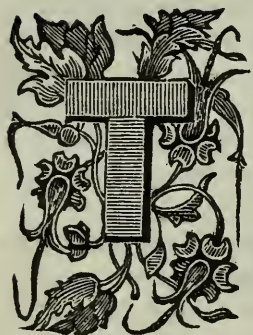
Lynn had 168 men in the Revolutionary War, of whom fifty-two were lost, beside the four men killed at Lexington.



## CHAPTER XI.

Politics and Religious Opinions — Methodists — Shipwreck — Total Eclipse — Academy — Embargo — War — Moll Pitcher — Sea Serpent — Frosted Trees — Antimasonry — Shower of Meteors — Universalists — Episcopal Church — Eastern Rail-road — Woman — Great Storms — High Tides — Comet — Sagamore Hall burnt. 1784 to 1844.

The good old times — all times when old are good —  
Are gone. — BYRON.



THE whole political course of our country has now been changed by one great event. We are no longer the subjects of a foreign power. A new era has dawned upon us. The days of three-cornered hats and three-cornered swords are gone. Our governors are no longer appointed in England; our civil policy is no longer regulated by her laws. We stand alone, a nation among nations. Our thousands of little democracies, scattered throughout the wide extent of our almost boundless country, constitute one grand Republic, which is now trying, before the world, the great problem, whether a free people can govern themselves.

For more than twenty years from the adoption of the State constitution in 1780, the people of Lynn do not appear to have been much agitated by any conflict of political opinions. The insurrection in the central counties of Massachusetts, in 1786, was the first event which disturbed the public peace; and in the following year, a company of twenty-three men from Lynn, went voluntarily to suppress the rebellion. The administration of the national government, from its commencement in 1789, seems to have been generally approved, until the year 1794, when a treaty of amity was concluded with England, by John Jay, Chief Justice of the United States, with the sanction of President Washington. This treaty served to evince the existence, throughout the union, of two great parties, who were separated by their different views of the nature and extent of republican government. One of these parties, denominated Federalists, contended that the President, with the consent of two thirds of



the Senate, had the constitutional right, in the most extended sense, to make foreign alliances, on terms the most favorable to the public welfare. The other party, styled Democrats, considered this power to be so restricted, as not to infringe the particular rights of any State. The principle of one party had for its object, the greatest good of the greatest number — of the other, the greatest good of each individual. Both these parties were republican in their views; and were undoubtedly influenced by a pure regard to the general good; though they were reciprocally regarded as being hostile to it.

In 1781, all the votes in the town, which were forty-four, were given for John Hancock, the first governor under the new constitution. The smallest number was in 1784; when there were only twenty-seven votes for governor, and six for senators. There were, indeed, many more voters in the town, but they were so well satisfied with the wisdom of their rulers, that they gave themselves no anxiety on the subject. But causes of dissatisfaction gradually arose; and the spirit of party began to be more plainly manifested in 1800, when there were one hundred and thirteen votes for Caleb Strong, the Federal governor, and sixty-eight for Elbridge Gerry, the Democratic candidate. The political excitement however appears to have been very small, and conducted altogether without animosity. There was but one list of senators brought forward until 1801, and the Federalists retained the ascendancy until 1804. After the death of Washington, and the elevation of Mr. Jefferson to the Presidential chair, the Democrats in this town began more ostensibly to increase, and in 1804 manifested a decided superiority. At the choice of governor, 145 votes were given for Caleb Strong, and 272 for James Sullivan; and this year, for the first time, a democratic representative was chosen. The parties now began to regard each other with manifestations of decided hostility, and the political arena presented a field of civil warfare without bloodshed. The most strenuous exertions were made by one party to maintain the ascendancy, and by the other to regain it. No man was permitted to remain neutral; and if any one, presuming on his independence, ventured to form an opinion of his own, and to regard both parties as passing the bounds of moderation, he was regarded as an enemy by both. This rage of party continued several years, and was sometimes so violent, as to be in danger of degenerating into animosity and personal hatred.

**1784.** Rev. Obabiah Parsons was installed Pastor of the First Parish, on the fourth of February. On the twenty-eighth of October, General Lafayette passed through the town, on a visit to the eastward.

**1786.** In April, Benjamin Ingalls, in throwing an anchor from a boat in the harbor, was drawn overboard and drowned.

The first rock was split in Lynn this year, by John Gore. Before this, the people had used rough rock for building.

On the ninth of December, there was a very great snow; nearly seven feet deep on a level. Sparhawk.

**1789.** General Washington passed through Lynn in October. The inhabitants were greatly delighted to see him; and the old Boston road was thronged with people, who came forth to salute him as he proceeded to Salem.

**1791.** Until this year there were but two religious denominations in town — the First Congregational church and the Society of Friends. This year the First Methodist Society was organized. The Rev. Jesse Lee, a preacher of that persuasion, came to Lynn on the fourteenth of December previous, and was so successful in preaching at private houses, that on the twentieth of February a society was formed; and on the twenty-first of June a house of worship was raised, which was dedicated on the twenty-sixth of the same month. This was the first Methodist meeting-house in Massachusetts. Several members of the First Congregational church united with this society; among whom were the two deacons, who took with them the vessels of the communion service. These vessels consist of four large silver tankards, eleven silver cups, and one silver font for baptism; presented to the church by John Burrill, Theophilus Burrill, and John Breed. The removal of this plate occasioned a difference between the societies, and the Congregational church was compelled to borrow vessels, for the communion, from the church at Saugus. The deacons afterward offered to return one half; and in prospect of a prosecution, they relinquished the whole. It is a fact worthy of notice, that the First Congregational church, which had opposed and persecuted the Quakers and the Baptists, was at one time so reduced, that only three male members remained. In 1794, this church invited those of its members who had seceded to the Methodist society to be reunited; and within a few years, one of the deacons and several of the other members returned. The first stationed minister of the Methodists was Rev. Amos G. Thomson. The frequent changes of the ministers of this persuasion, render it inconvenient to keep an account of them. They are regarded as belonging to the Conference, or society at large; and, like the apostles, they 'have no certain dwelling place.' May their rest be in heaven!

The eighteenth of December was the coldest day known for many years. The thermometer was twenty degrees below zero.



**1792.** Rev. Obadiah Parsons relinquished his connexion with the First Parish on the sixteenth of July. He was born at Gloucester, graduated at Cambridge in 1768, and was installed at Lynn, February 4, 1784, where he preached eight years. He returned to Gloucester, where he died in December, 1801. His first wife was Elizabeth Wigglesworth; his second, Sally Coffin. He had nine children; Elizabeth W., William, Sally C., William, Sally C., Obadiah, Polly, Harriet, and Sally.

The ship *Commerce* of Boston was wrecked on the coast of Arabia, on the tenth of July. One of the crew was James Larabee of Lynn, who suffered almost incredible hardships, being robbed by the Bedouins, and compelled to travel hundreds of miles over the burning sands, where he saw his companions daily perishing by hunger, thirst, and heat. He finally arrived at Muscat, where he was relieved and sent home by the English Consul. Of thirty-four men, only eight survived.

On the tenth of August, Joshua Howard, aged twenty-nine years, went into the water, after laboring hard upon the salt marsh, and was immediately chilled and drowned.

**1793.** This year a post office was established at Lynn, at the corner of Boston and Hart streets. Col. James Robinson was the first postmaster.

A boat containing five persons, was upset, near the mouth of Saugus river, on the fourteenth of December, and three persons drowned. These were John Burrill, aged 67, William Whittemore, aged 27, and William Crow, aged 15 years. They had been on an excursion of pleasure to the Pines; the afternoon was pleasant, and as they were returning, the boat was struck by a squall, which frightened them, and caused them to seek the shore, which they probably would have gained, had not one of them jumped upon the side of the boat, which caused it to be upset. Two of them swam to the shore in safety. Mr. Burrill and the boy also gained the beach, but died in a few minutes.

Dr. John Flagg died on the twenty-seventh of May. He was a son of Rev. Ebenezer Flagg, of Chester, N. H., born in 1743, and graduated at Cambridge in 1761. In 1769 he came to Lynn, where his prudence and skill soon secured him the confidence of the people. He was chosen a member of the Committee of Safety in 1775, and received a commission as Colonel. His wife was Susannah Fowle, and he had one daughter, Susannah, who married Dr. James Gardner.

**1794.** On the seventeenth of May, there was a great frost. Rev. Thomas Cushing Thacher was ordained minister of the

First Parish, on the thirteenth of August. A new school-house was this year built by a few individuals, and purchased by the town. \$666 were granted for the support of schools.

In the prospect of a war with France, the government of the United States required an army of eighty thousand men to be in preparation. Seventy-five men were detached from Lynn. The town gave each of them twenty-three shillings, and voted to increase their wages to ten dollars a month.

A child of Mr. Eli Newman, named David, aged three years, was drowned, on the nineteenth of October.

**1795.** In a great storm, on the night of the ninth of December, the Scottish Brig Peggy, Captain John Williamson, from Cape Breton, was wrecked near the southern end of Lynn Beach. She was laden with dried fish, consigned to Thomas Amory of Boston. There were twelve men on board, only one of whom, Hugh Cameron, of Greenock, in Scotland, escaped. He was ordered into the long boat, to make fast the tackle, when the same wave separated it from the vessel, and swept his unfortunate comrades from their last hold of life. The vessel was completely wrecked, being dashed to pieces upon the hard sand, and the fragments of the vessel, the cargo, and the crew, were scattered in melancholy ruin along the beach. The bodies of eight of the drowned men were recovered, and on the eleventh, they were buried from the First Parish meeting-house; where an affecting sermon was preached by Rev. Mr. Thacher, from Job 1: 19, 'And I only am escaped alone!' During the discourse, Hugh Cameron stood in the centre aisle.

**1798.** A child of Mr. Daniel R. Witt, named Abigail, was drowned on the 26th of July. As several persons were sailing in a boat, in Saugus river, on the 25th of August, a gun was accidentally discharged, and a son of Mr. John Ballard, named Amos, eleven years of age, was instantly killed.

**1799.** A barn, belonging to Mr. Micajah Newhall, on the south side of the common, was struck by lightning, about noon, on the second of August, and burnt, with a quantity of hay and grain, and one of his oxen.

**1800.** The memory of Washington was honored by a procession and eulogy, on the 13th of January. He died on the 14th of December previous. The people assembled at the school house; the scholars walked first, with crape on their arms, followed by a company of militia, with muffled drums, the municipal officers and citizens. The eulogy was pronounced by Rev. Thomas C. Thacher, at the First Congregational Meeting



House. A funeral sermon, on the same occasion, was preached by Rev. William Guirey, at the First Methodist Meeting House.

On the afternoon of Sunday, March 1st, there was an earthquake.

On the 11th of June, Mr. Samuel Dyer, a gentleman from Boston, was drowned in Humfrey's Pond, at Lynnfield.

On the 26th of July, Mr. Nathaniel Fuller, aged 38 years, was drowned from a fishing boat, near Nahant.

The ship William Henry, of Salem, owned by Hon. William Gray, was wrecked on an island of ice, on the 1st of May. Three of the crew were John Newhall, James Parrott, and Bassett Breed, of Lynn. They launched the long boat; and the whole crew, consisting of fifteen persons, leaped into it. They saved nothing but the compass, the captain's trunk, an axe, and a fishing line. For six days they had no water but a small quantity which had fallen from the clouds, and laid in the hollow of an island of salt water ice. On the fourth day, they caught a fish, which some of them devoured raw, but others were too faint with their long fast to swallow any. When the storm and fog cleared up, they went ashore at Newfoundland, and the next morning found their boat stove and filled with water. They subsisted three days on sea peas, thistles, and cranberries. Several of the crew were unable to walk; but having repaired their boat, they put to sea, and were discovered by a vessel containing four men, who at first would afford them no relief, but after much entreaty threw them a rope, and they arrived at St. John's, where the American consul furnished them with a passage home.

Previous to the year 1800, there were only three houses on Nahant, owned by Breed, Hood, and Johnson. This year, a large house was erected on the western part of Nahant, as a hotel, by Capt. Joseph Johnson.

**1801.** Theophilus Ingalls, aged 18 years, was killed at Portsmouth on the 8th of October, by falling from the foretop of the brig Traveller, and breaking his skull on the deck.

A very brilliant meteor, half the size of the full moon, appeared in the northwest, on the evening of Friday, October 16th.

**1802.** Rev. John Carnes died on the 20th of October, aged 78 years. He was born at Boston in 1724, graduated in 1742, was minister at Stoneham and Rehoboth, and chaplain in the army of the Revolution. At the close of the war he came to Lynn, received a commission as justice of the peace, was nine times elected as a representative, and, in 1788, was a member of the Convention to ratify the Constitution of the United States. He was an active and useful citizen. He married

Mary, daughter of John Lewis, resided in Boston street, and had two children: John and Mary.

**1803.** Rev. Joseph Roby, pastor of the Congregational Church in Saugus, died on the last day of January, aged 79 years. He was born at Boston in 1724, graduated in 1742, and was ordained minister of the third parish of Lynn, now the first parish of Saugus, 1752. He preached fifty-one years. He was an excellent scholar, a pious and venerable man, and was highly esteemed for his social virtues. He published two Fast Sermons, one in 1781, the other in 1794. He married Rachel Proctor, of Boston, and had seven children: Joseph, Rachel, Mary, Henry, Thomas, Elizabeth, and Sarah.

The ship Federal George, of Duxbury, sailed from Boston in February, bound to Madeira, with a cargo of flour and corn. In the number of the crew were three men from Lynn, whose names were Bassett Breed, Parker Mudge, and Jonathan Ward. In the midst of the Atlantic they were overtaken by a great storm, which, on the 22d, capsized the vessel, carried away her masts, and bowsprit, and when it subsided, left the deck two feet beneath the water. The crew, which consisted of seven men, remained lashed upon the windlass for twenty-four days. Their sustenance, for the first part of the time, was a small piece of meat, and a box of candles, which floated up from the hold. They afterwards succeeded in obtaining a bag of corn, and some flour soaked with salt water. Their allowance of drink, at first, was a coffee-pot cover full of water twice a day. This was afterwards reduced to one half, and then to one third. On the 18th of March, they were relieved by the Duke of Kent, an English merchant ship, returning from the South Sea. When they were taken from the wreck, they had but one quart of water left.

On Sunday, the 8th of May, a snow storm commenced, and continued about seven hours. The snow was left upon the ground to the depth of one inch. The apple trees were in blossom at the time.

On the eighth of July, Mr. William Cushman, aged 23 years, a workman on the Lynn Hotel, was drowned from a raft of timber, in Saugus river.

On Sunday, the 10th of July, about three of the clock in the afternoon, a house in Boston street was struck by lightning, and Mr. Miles Shory and his wife were instantly killed. The bolt appeared like a large ball of fire. It struck the western chimney, and, after descending several feet, separated. One branch melted a watch, which hung over the chamber mantel, passed over the cradle of a sleeping infant, covering it with cinders, and went out at the north chamber window. The other branch



descended with the chimney, and when it reached the chamber floor, separated into two branches, above the heads of the wife and husband, who were passing at that instant from the parlor to the kitchen. One part struck Mrs. Shory on the side of her head, left her stocking on fire, and passed into the ground. The other part entered Mr. Shory's bosom, passed down his side, melted the buckle of his shoe, and went out at one of the front windows. There were four families in the house, which contained, at the time, nineteen persons, several of whom were much stunned. One man, who stood at the eastern door, was crushed to the floor by the pressure of the atmosphere. When the people entered the room in which Mr. Shory and his wife lay, they found two small children endeavoring to awaken their parents. An infant, which Mrs. Shory held in her arms, when she was struck, was found with its hair scorched, and its little finger nails slightly burned. She is yet living, the wife of Mr. Samuel Farrington. Mrs. Shory was a native of New Hampshire, twenty-nine years of age. Mrs. Love Shory, aged twenty-eight years, was a daughter of Mr. Allen Breed of Lynn. On the next day they were buried. The coffins were carried side by side, and a double procession of mourners, of a great length, followed the bodies to their burial in one grave.

On the next Sabbath, a funeral sermon was preached by the Rev. Thomas Cushing Thacher, at the First Congregational Meeting House, from Job xxxvii. : 2, 3, 4. At the close of the service, a house in Market Street, owned by Mr. Richard Pratt, was struck by lightning. It descended the chimney, separated into three branches, did considerable damage to the house, and left Mr. Pratt senseless on the floor for several minutes.

Within three weeks, ending on the 16th of August, twenty-three of the inhabitants of Lynn died.

On Sunday, the 28th of August, at one o'clock in the morning, the hotel on the western part of Nahant, owned by Captain Joseph Johnson, took fire and was consumed, with all its contents. The family were awaked by the crying of a child, which was stifling with the smoke, and had just time to escape with their lives. A black man, who slept in the upper story, saved himself by throwing a feather bed from the window, and jumping upon it.

On the 8th of September, John Ballard, John Pennerson, and his son, went out on a fishing excursion. On the next day, the boat came ashore at Nahant, with her sails set, the lines out for fishing, and food ready cooked. Nothing more was ever heard of the crew; but as Mr. Pennerson was a Frenchman, and as a French vessel had been seen that day in the bay, it was conjectured that they might have been taken on board, and carried to France.

On Thursday, the 22d of September, the Salem Turnpike was opened, and began to receive toll. The Lynn hotel was built this year. The number of shares in this turnpike were twelve hundred, and the original cost was \$189,000. This road will become the property of the Commonwealth, when the proprietors shall have received the whole cost, with twelve per cent. interest; and the bridge over Mystic river, when seventy years shall be accomplished. This turnpike, for nearly four miles, passes over a tract of salt marsh, which is frequently covered by the tide. When it was first projected, many persons esteemed it impracticable to build a good road on such a foundation. One person testified that he had run a pole down to the depth of twenty-five feet. Yet this turnpike proves to be one of the most excellent roads in America. The post office was removed to the west end of the common.

**1804.** This year a powder house was built, near High Rock, at an expense of one hundred and twenty dollars.

On the 4th of August, the body of a woman was found in the canal, on the north side of the turnpike, a short distance west of Saugus bridge. She was ascertained to have been a widow Currel, who was travelling from Boston to Marblehead. The manner of her death was unknown.

Rev. William Frothingham was ordained minister of the third parish, now Saugus, on the 26th of September. He continued to perform the duties of that office till the year 1817, when he was dismissed on his own request.

One of the greatest storms ever known in New England commenced on Tuesday morning, the 9th of October. The rain fell fast, accompanied by thunder. At four in the afternoon the wind became furious, and continued with unabated energy till the next morning. This was probably the severest storm after that of August, 1635. The damage occasioned by it was very great. Buildings were unroofed, barns, chimnies, and fences were blown down, and orchards greatly injured. The chimney of the school-house, on the western part of the common, fell through the roof, in the night, carrying the bench, at which I had been sitting a few hours before, into the cellar. Many vessels were wrecked, and in several towns the steeples of meeting-houses were broken off, and carried to a great distance. The number of the trees uprooted in the woodlands was beyond calculation. Thousands of the oldest and hardiest sons of the forest, which had braved the storms of centuries, were prostrated before it, and the woods throughout were strewed with the trunks of fallen trees, which were not gathered up for many years. Some have supposed that a great storm at an early period may have blown down the trees on the marshes, but it could not have buried them several feet deep.



**1805.** For one hundred and seventy-three years, from the building of the first parish meeting-house, the people had annually assembled in it, for the transaction of their municipal concerns. But this year, the members of that parish observing the damage which such meetings occasioned to the house, and believing that, since the incorporation of other parishes, the town had no title in it, refused to have it occupied as a town-house. This refusal occasioned much controversy between the town and parish, and committees were appointed by both parties to accomplish an adjustment. An engagement was partially made for the occupation of the house, on the payment of twenty-eight dollars annually; but the town refused to sanction the agreement, and the meetings were removed to the Methodist meeting-house, on the eastern part of the common.

The Lynn Academy was opened on the 5th of April, under the care of Mr. William Ballard. A bell was presented to this institution by Col. James Robinson.

An earthquake happened on the 6th of April, at fifteen minutes after two, in the afternoon.

On the 11th of May, Mr. John Legree Johnson's house, on the east end of the common, was struck by lightning.

A society of Free Masons was constituted on the 10th of June, by the name of Mount Carmel Lodge.

On the 24th of July, Mr. Charles Adams fell from the rocks at Nipper Stage, on Nahant, and was drowned.

**1806.** A total eclipse of the sun happened on Monday, the 16th of June. It commenced a few minutes after ten in the forenoon, and continued about two hours and a half. The sun rose clear, and the morning was uncommonly pleasant. As the eclipse advanced, the air became damp and cool, like the approach of evening. The birds at first flew about in astonishment, and then retired to their roosts, and the stars appeared. The shadow of the moon was seen travelling across the earth from west to east; and at the moment when the last direct ray of the sun was intercepted, all things around appeared to waver, as if the earth was falling from its orbit. Several persons fainted, and many were observed to take hold of the objects near them for support. The motion of the spheres was distinctly perceptible, and the whole system appeared to be disordered. It seemed as if the central orb of light and animation was about to be forever extinguished, and creation was returning to its original nonentity. The most unreflecting mind was made sensible of its dependence, and the soul involuntarily sought the protection of its Maker. The total darkness endured about three minutes. When the sun came forth from his obscurity, it was

with overwhelming lustre ; the dreadful silence which had spread its dominion over the universe, was broken ; the cocks began to crow, the birds renewed their songs, and man and nature seemed to rejoice, as if returning to existence, from which they had been shut out by the unwonted darkness.

The anniversary of American Independence was this year publicly celebrated in Lynn, for the first time. As the spirit of party was exercising its unabated influence, the inhabitants could not unite in performing the honors of the day, and made two processions. The Federalists assembled at the First Congregational meeting-house, where an oration was delivered by Mr. Hosea Hildreth, preceptor of the academy ; and the Democrats met at the First Methodist meeting-house, where an oration was pronounced by Dr. Peter G. Robbins. The Democrats dined at the hotel, and the Federalists in the hall of the academy.

And such regard for Freedom there was shown,  
That either party wished her all their own !

**1807.** The town, having determined that no person who was not an inhabitant should have the privilege of taking any sand, shells, or sea manure from the Lynn beaches, this year prosecuted several of the inhabitants of Danvers, for trespassing against this order. The decision of the court established the right of the town to pass such a vote, and left it in legal possession of all the natural treasures which the sea might cast upon its shores.

The depression of commerce and manufactures, at the close of this year, was very great. This was principally occasioned by the state of affairs in Europe, and the spoliation of property in American vessels, by the governments of France and England, which, in the prosecution of their hostilities, had made decrees affecting neutral powers. On the twenty-second of December, Congress passed an act of embargo, by which all the ports of the United States were closed against the clearance of all vessels.

**1808.** The enforcement of the embargo law occasioned great suffering throughout the Union, particularly in commercial places. The harbors were filled with dismantled vessels, which lay rotting at the wharves. Thousands of seamen were thrown out of employment, the price of provisions was enhanced, and the spirit of desolation seemed to be spreading her dark wings over the land. While the Democrats were disposed to regard this state of things as requisite to preserve the dignity of the nation and the energy of government, the Federalists viewed it as an impolitic, unjust, and arbitrary measure, by which the



interests of commerce were sacrificed to the will of party. The spirit of opposition, in this difference of opinion, was put forth in its utmost strength. At the election in April, the greatest number of votes was produced which had at that time been given in the town; of which 418 were for James Sullivan, and 273 for Christopher Gore. On the second of May, the people assembled for the choice of representatives. The Democratic party voted to choose three, and the Federalists were inclined to send none. As there was some difficulty in ascertaining the vote, it was determined that the people should go out of the house, and arrange themselves on different sides of the common, to be counted. The Democrats went out, but a part of the Federalists remained, and took possession of the house. They chose a town clerk, to whom the oath of office was administered, voted to send no representative, and made a record of their proceeding in the town book. The other party then returned, and chose three representatives. Several of the principal Federalists were afterward prosecuted for their infringement of a legal town meeting; but as it appeared on examination, that none of the town meetings had been legal for many years, because not called by a warrant, they were exonerated. On the twenty ninth of August, a meeting was held to petition the president to remove the embargo; but the town voted that such a proceeding would be highly improper, and passed several resolutions, approving the measures of the administration. On the following day, the Federalists prepared a memorial, expressing their disapprobation of the embargo, and requesting its repeal, which was transmitted to the President. The feelings of both parties were raised to a degree of excitement, which could only be sustained by political events of unusual occurrence.

On the twentieth of September, the house of widow Jerusha Williams, in Market Street, was struck by lightning. On the same afternoon, the lightning fell on a flock of sheep at Nahant, which were gathered beside a wall for shelter, and killed eighteen of them.

On the night of Monday, October thirty-first, Mr. Theophilus Breed's barn, on the south side of the common, was burned; and on the night of the following Thursday, a barn belonging to Mr. Jacob Chase, on the opposite side of the common, was consumed; both of them having been set on fire by a mischievous boy.

A company of Artillery was incorporated by the General Court, on the eighteenth of November, and two brass field pieces allowed them.

This year Benjamin Merrill, Esq., came into town. He was the first lawyer at Lynn.

**1809.** The inhabitants petitioned the General Court for an act to establish the proceedings of the town in their previous meetings, which had been illegal, in consequence of the meetings having been called by a notice from the Selectmen, instead of a warrant to a constable. A resolve confirming the proceedings of the town was passed by the Court on the eighteenth of February.

The embargo law was repealed by Congress, on the twelfth of April, and an act of non-intercourse with France and England, substituted in its place.

**1810.** The fourth of July was celebrated by both political parties, who very patriotically and cordially united for that purpose. They formed a procession at the Lynn hotel, which was then kept by Mr. Ebenezer Lewis, and proceeded to the First Congregational meeting-house, where an oration was delivered by Dr. Peter G. Robbins.

This year the Lynn Mineral Spring Hotel was built.

On the twenty-fifth of August, Mr. David Dunn was drowned from a gondola, in Saugus river.

On Friday evening, November ninth, there was an earthquake.

**1811.** On the eighth of January, Ayer Williams Marsh, aged five years, was killed by the falling of an anvil, from a cheese press.

A great snow storm commenced on the second of February, and continued three days. It was piled up in reefs, in some places more than fifteen feet. In Market street, arches were dug beneath it, high enough for carriages to pass through.

On the fourth of July, the officers of Lynn, Marblehead, and Danvers, had a military celebration at Lynn. The young Federalists also partook of a dinner in the hall of Lewis's hotel, which was tastefully decorated for the occasion, by the young ladies.

The seventh of July was excessively hot. The thermometer rose to 101 degrees in the shade. Mr. John Jacobs, aged 70 years, while laboring on the salt marsh, fell dead in consequence of the heat.

On the seventh of August, George, a black man, aged twenty years, a servant at the hotel, was drowned, while bathing in the fatal river Saugus.

A splendid comet was visible on the eleventh of October, between Arcturus and Lyra. Its train was estimated to be forty millions of miles in length. It remained visible for several months.



The Second Methodist Society was formed in the eastern part of the town, by separation from the first. A meeting house was built, which was dedicated on the twenty seventh of November. Their first minister was Rev. Epaphras Kibbey.

**1812.** On the fourth of May there was a snow storm, all day and night. The snow was about eight inches deep.

War was declared by Congress, against England, on the eighteenth of June. This was called the War of Impressments, because England claimed the right to search American vessels for her sailors. The conflict was chiefly conducted by battle ships on the water, but people were much affected by it in the depression of commerce. The Federalists disapproved of the war — the Democrats exulted in it.

A new meeting house was built by the First Methodist Society, at the east end of the Common. The burial ground in Union street was opened.

**1813.** Rev. Thomas Cushing Thacher discontinued his connection with the First Parish. The people gave him a recommendation, and made him a present of eight hundred dollars. He was a son of Rev. Peter Thacher, minister of Brattle Street Church, in Boston. He graduated in 1790, was ordained in 1794, preached nineteen years, and removed to Cambridge Port. He wrote many good sermons, six of which, on interesting occasions, he published.

1. A Sermon on the Annual Thanksgiving, 1794.
2. A Sermon on the Interment of Eight Seamen, 1795.
3. A Eulogy on the Death of Washington, 1800.
4. A Sermon on the Death of Mrs. Ann Carnes, 1800.
5. A Masonic Address, delivered at Cambridge.
6. A Sermon on the Death of Mr. Shory and Wife, 1803.

At the town meeting in March, thirty nine tythingmen were chosen. This was for the purpose of enforcing the Sunday Law, that no person should journey on the sabbath.

The schooner Industry was fitted out as a privateer, under the command of Capt. Joseph Mudge, and sent in three prizes.

On the first of June, the people of Lynn were called forth by an occasion of unusual interest. The English frigate Shannon, Capt. Brock, being expressly fitted for the purpose, approached the harbor of Boston, and challenged the American frigate, Chesapeake, to battle. The hills and the house tops were crowded with spectators, who looked on with intense solicitude. The Chesapeake, commanded by Capt. James Lawrence, sailed out beyond Nahant, and engaged with her adversary. After a short and spirited conflict, Capt. Lawrence fell, the colors of the Chesapeake were lowered, and the Shannon, with her prize, departed for Halifax.

The new Methodist meeting-house was dedicated on the third of June.

Rev. Isaac Hurd was ordained Pastor of the First Parish, on the fifteenth of September.

This year many raccoons, driven by the war from the north, were shot at Swampscot; and a wild-cat, after a desperate resistance, was killed at Red Rock.

✓ The celebrated Mary Pitcher, a professed fortune-teller, died April 9, 1813, aged 75 years. Her grand-father, John Dimond, lived at Marblehead, and for many years exercised the same pretensions. Her father, Capt. John Dimond, was master of a vessel from that place, and was living in 1770. Mary Dimond was born in the year 1738. She was connected with some of the best families in Essex county, and, with the exception of her extraordinary pretensions, there was nothing disreputable in her life or character. She was of the medium height and size for a woman, with a good form and agreeable manners. Her head, phrenologically considered, was somewhat capacious; her forehead broad and full, her hair dark brown, her nose inclining to long, and her face pale and thin. There was nothing gross or sensual in her appearance — her countenance was rather intellectual; and she had that contour of face and expression, which, without being positively beautiful, is, nevertheless, decidedly interesting — a thoughtful, pensive, and sometimes down-cast look, almost approaching to melancholy — an eye, when it looked at you, of calm and keen penetration — and an expression of intelligent discernment, half mingled with a glance of shrewdness. She took a poor man for a husband, and then adopted what she doubtless thought the harmless employment of fortune-telling, in order to support her children. In this she was probably more successful than she herself had anticipated; and she became celebrated, not only throughout America, but throughout the world, for her skill. There was no port on either continent, where floated the flag of an American ship, that had not heard the fame of Moll Pitcher. To her came the rich and the poor — the wise and the ignorant — the accomplished and the vulgar — the timid and the brave. The ignorant sailor, who believed in the omens and dreams of superstition, and the intelligent merchant, whose ships were freighted for distant lands, alike sought her dwelling; and many a vessel has been deserted by its crew, and waited idly at the wharves for weeks, in consequence of her unlucky predictions. Many persons came from places far remote, to consult her on affairs of love, or loss of property; or to obtain her surmises respecting the vicissitudes of their future fortune. Every youth, who was not assured of the reciprocal affection of his fair one, and every maid who was desirous of anticipating the hour of her highest



felicity, repaired at evening to her humble dwelling, which stood on what was then a lonely road, near the foot of High Rock, with the single dwelling of Dr. Henry Burchsted nearly opposite; over whose gateway were the two bones of a great whale, disposed in the form of a gothic arch. There, in her unpretending mansion, for more than fifty years, did she answer the inquiries of the simple rustic from the wilds of New Hampshire, and the wealthy noble from Europe; and, doubtless, her predictions have had an influence in shaping the fortunes of thousands. She was, indeed, one of the most wonderful women of any age; and had she lived in the days of alleged witchcraft, would doubtless have been the first to suffer. That she acquired her intelligence by intercourse with evil spirits, it would now be preposterous to assert — and it requires a very great stretch of credulity to believe that she arrived at so many correct conclusions, merely by guess-work. That she made no pretension to any thing supernatural, is evident from her own admission, when some one offered her a large sum, if she would tell him what ticket in the lottery would draw the highest prize? ‘Do you think,’ said she, ‘if I knew, I should not buy it myself?’ Several of the best authenticated anecdotes which are related of her, seem to imply that she possessed, in some degree, the faculty which is now termed clairvoyance. Indeed, there seems to be no other conclusion, unless we suppose that persons of general veracity have told us absolute falsehoods. The possession of this faculty, with her keen perception and shrewd judgment, in connexion with the ordinary arts which she is admitted to have used, to detect the character and business of her visitors, will perhaps account for all that is extraordinary in her intelligence. In so many thousand instances also, of the exercise of her faculty, there is certainly no need of calling in supernatural aid to account for her sometimes judging right; and these favorable instances were certain to be related to her advantage, and insured her abundance of credibility. She married Robert Pitcher, a shoemaker, on the second of October, 1760. Had she married differently, as she might have done, she would have adorned a brighter and happier station in life, and the world would never have heard of her fame. She had one son, John, and three daughters, Rebecca, Ruth, and Lydia, who married respectably; and some of her descendants are among the prettiest young ladies of Lynn. Nor is there any reason why they should blush at the mention of their ancestress. While it is hoped that no one, in this enlightened age, will follow her profession, it must be admitted that she had virtues which many might practice with advantage. She supported her family by her skill, and she was benevolent in her disposition. She has been known to rise before sunrise, walk two miles to a mill,

purchase a quantity of meal, and carry it to a poor widow, who would otherwise have had no breakfast for her children.

**1814.** The district of Lynnfield, which was separated from Lynn on the third of July, 1782, was this year incorporated as a town, on the twenty-eighth of February. On the same day, the Lynn Mechanics' Bank was incorporated, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. The Town-house, on the Common, was begun the same month.

A company of militia, consisting of seventy-eight men from Essex county, was detached, in July, for the defence of the sea-coast. Of this number, Lynn furnished fifteen, and the whole were placed under the command of Capt. Samuel Mudge, of this town. On the first of August, they mustered at Danvers, and on the next day marched to Salem, and encamped on Winter Island. On the twenty-seventh, a violent storm blew down most of the tents, and on the next day the detachment removed to Fort Lee. On the night of the twenty-eighth of September, a great alarm was occasioned by some men who were drawing a seine at Beverly. Alarm guns were fired about midnight, and in less than thirty minutes the Salem regiment was drawn up for orders. Nearly sixty old men of that town also took their arms, went directly to the fort, and patriotically offered their services to Captain Mudge. The alarm spread to the neighboring towns, and within an hour the Lynn regiment was in arms, and on its march toward Salem. The promptitude with which these two regiments were formed, the self-possession manifested by the officers and soldiers, and the readiness with which they marched toward what was then confidently believed to be a scene of action and danger, is worthy of commendation. The company was discharged on the first of November. During a considerable part of this season, guards were stationed in Lynn, on Long Wharf and Saugus Bridge. The town, with its accustomed liberality, allowed to each of its soldiers, who went into service, thirty dollars, in addition to the pay of the government, which was only eight dollars a month. The town received 100 muskets from the State, and 100 old men volunteered to use them.

In a great snow-storm, on the night of November nineteenth, Mr. Ward Hartwell, of Claremont, N. H. perished in attempting to pass Lynn Beach, to Nahant.

An earthquake happened on the twenty-eighth of November, at twenty minutes past seven, in the evening.

**1815.** The Second Parish of Lynn was incorporated on the seventeenth of February, as a separate Town, by the name of Saugus. On the same day, a treaty of peace with England,



which was signed at Ghent on the twenty-fourth of December preceding, was ratified by Congress.

This year the First Baptist Church in Lynn was organized, on the seventeenth of March. In May, the meeting-house which the Methodist society had vacated, was purchased for their use. It is worthy of remark, that this building was placed upon land purchased of the first Congregational Church—that very church which had prosecuted the Baptists, and delivered them up to the executioner, 164 years before.

A very great storm, on the twenty-third of September, occasioned much damage. The wind blew violently from the south-east, and buildings, fences, and trees, fell before it. A part of the roof of the Academy was taken off, and carried by the wind more than half-way across the Common. The spray of the ocean was borne far upon the land, and the fruit on trees several miles from the shore, was impregnated with salt.

**1816.** The Baptist society was incorporated on the fifteenth of April; and on the fifteenth of September, Rev. George Phippen was settled, as their first minister.

Rev. Isaac Hurd relinquished his pastoral care over the First Congregational Society, on the twenty-second of May. He was born at Charlestown, and removed to Exeter.

In November, new bells were placed on the First Congregational, and the First Methodist meeting-houses.

**1817.** Friday, the fourteenth of February, was an exceeding cold day. The thermometer was eighteen degrees below zero. There was an earthquake on Sunday, September seventh; and another on the fifth of October. This year, Hon. Thomas H. Perkins built the first stone cottage on Nahant. President Monroe passed through Lynn.

**1818.** On Friday, January thirteenth, the thermometer was eleven degrees below zero.

Rev. Otis Rockwood was ordained pastor of the First Congregational Church on the first of July.

A stone building, for a school-house and library, was built at Nahant, and several hundred volumes presented to it, by gentlemen from Boston.

The First Social Library at Lynn was incorporated.

**1819.** The winter was unusually mild, with little snow, and the harbor scarcely frozen. Farmers ploughed in every month; January was like April, and the spring was forward and warm.

The first attempt to form an Episcopal Church in Lynn, was made this year. A few persons were organized as a church on

the twenty-seventh of January, and continued to worship in the Academy about four years.

On the thirty-first of January, Jonathan Mansfield was drowned in the Flax Pond. On the sixth of April, William Phillips was drowned in the Pines River. On the fourth of September, Asa Gowdy was drowned near the mouth of Saugus river.

Tuesday, July sixth, was an exceeding warm day. The thermometer rose to 120 degrees.

A farm of about fifty acres was purchased by the Town, and a new Poor-house built on Willis's Hill.

This year the Nahant Hotel was built, by Hon. Thomas H. Perkins and Hon. Edward H. Robbins, at an expense of about sixty thousand dollars.

That singular marine animal, called the Sea Serpent, first made his appearance in the waters of Lynn, this year. It was alleged that it had been seen in August, 1817 and 1818, in Gloucester harbor. On the thirteenth and fourteenth days of August this year, many hundred persons were collected on Lynn Beach, by a report that it was to be seen. Many depositions have been taken of its subsequent appearance. It was represented to have been from fifty to seventy feet in length, as large as a barrel, moving swiftly, sometimes with its head several feet above the tide. I have never seen such an animal, but perhaps it exists; and it may be one of the mighty existing relics of a buried world. In 1638, Dr. John Josselyn tells us of 'A Sea Serpent or Snake, that lay quailed up, like a cable, upon a Rock at Cape Ann. A boat passing by, with English aboard and two Indians, they would have shot the serpent, but the Indians dissuaded them, saying that if he were not killed outright, they would be all in danger of their lives.'

**1820.** On the fourteenth of February two barns, belonging to Mr. Joseph Breed, in Summer street, were burnt by the carelessness of a boy. The people, by a subscription, built him a good barn immediately, which they stocked with hay.

**1821.** On the twenty-fifth of January the thermometer was 17 degrees below zero.

Rev. Joseph Mottey died on the ninth of July. He was born at Salem, May 14, 1756, and graduated at Dartmouth in 1778. He was ordained over the second parish, now Lynnfield, September 24, 1780. He was characterized by extreme sensibility, and fondness for retirement. His manners were affable, and his mode of preaching mild and persuasive. He married Elizabeth Moody, and had four children; Charles, Elias, Charles Edward, and Eliza.



**1822.** A considerable disturbance was this year occasioned in the meetings of Friends, in consequence of a portion of that society having embraced different views. On Sunday, the seventeenth of February, one of these essayed to go into the ministers' gallery, with a sword by his side, which he said was an emblem of the warlike disposition of those against whom he wished to bear testimony; but before he had reached the seat, he was stopped, and the sword taken away. In the afternoon the disturbance was renewed, by several persons attempting to enter the high seats; and many people having assembled about the house, the deputy sheriff was called from the first parish meeting-house, who read the riot act in the street. Four persons were apprehended, and after a trial, the next day, before a justice, were committed to prison, at Salem, where they remained until the time of their trial, at Ipswich, on the sixteenth of March. Two of them were then discharged, and the others were fined. A report of this trial was published, with a review in a separate pamphlet.

The first Circulating Library at Lynn was opened this year, by the author of this sketch.

The Second Congregational Society was incorporated on the fifteenth of June; and on the twenty-fifth of November, the corner stone of the first Unitarian meeting-house was laid, with an address by Rev. Joseph Tuckerman, of Chelsea.

As some workmen were this year digging a cellar in Liberty street, they found the skeleton of an Indian. It was more than six feet in length, and the skull was of an uncommon thickness. Two large clam shells were found buried with it.

**1823.** The coldest day this year, was the first of March. The thermometer was seven degrees below zero.

The Second Congregational Meeting-house was dedicated on the thirtieth of April. Sermon by Rev. Henry Colman.

On the fifth of May, snow fell, and the ice was one quarter of an inch thick. Thermometer 29 at sunrise.

A young woman named Sarah Soames, aged 19 years, living at Thomas Raddin's, went in to bathe in Saugus river, on the evening of June 15th, and was drowned.

**1824.** The tide, during great storms, had for many years been making its encroachments upon Lynn Beach, washing its sands over into the harbor, and sometimes making deep channels, as it ran across in rivulets. In compliance with a petition of the town, the General Court, on the eighteenth of February, made a grant of fifteen hundred dollars, to which the town added fifteen hundred more; and by the aid of this fund, a fence was

constructed, about half the length of the beach, to prevent the encroachments of the tide.

The thermometer, on the twenty-fifth of February, was ten degrees below zero.

On the sixth of May, the ice was one quarter of an inch thick. Thermometer 27 at sunrise.

John Gilbert Pratt, aged eight years, son of Mr. Micajah C. Pratt, was drowned, on the fourteenth of April, from a boat, in the harbor.

On the twenty-first of June, Rev. Joseph Searl was ordained pastor of the Congregational society in Lynnfield. He continued his connexion with that parish, till the seventeenth of September, 1827, when he removed to Stoneham.

The French General Lafayette, who served in the War of Independence, this year came to America, and was received with general gratulation and welcome. He passed through Lynn on the thirty-first of August. He was received at Saugus bridge, on the Turnpike, by an escort, consisting of a battalion of cavalry, the Lynn Rifle Company, Lynn Light Infantry, the Salem Cadets, and a large number of officers and citizens, by whom he was conducted to the Lynn Hotel, where an address was delivered to him by Captain John White, to which he made an affectionate reply. After being introduced to many gentlemen and ladies, with several revolutionary soldiers, he ascended an open barouche, and passed through two lines of the children of the town, who threw flowers into his carriage as he proceeded. A salute of thirteen guns was fired, on his entrance into the town; and another of twenty-four, when he departed. On his way he passed through seven beautiful arches, decorated with evergreens, flags, and festoons of flowers, and bearing inscriptions in honor of Lafayette and Freedom. Proceeding through the principal streets, he was received, at the eastern boundary of the town, by another escort, and conducted to Marblehead.

Rev. James Diman Green was ordained pastor of the Second Congregational Society, on the third of November.

**1825.** For several days in the month of April, the moon and stars, with the planet Venus, were visible, for some hours, in the middle of the day. There were no clouds, and the sun shone with a dim light.

On the twentieth of April, a piece of land, adjoining the Quaker burial ground in Lynn, was purchased, by several individuals, and opened as a free burial ground. This was done because that society had refused to permit a child to be buried in their ground, without a compliance with their regulations.

This year, Frederic Tudor, Esq., of Boston, built his beautiful rustic cottage at Nahant.



On Thursday, the twenty-third of June, at the commencement of twilight, a remarkable sungush appeared. It proceeded from the place of sunsetting, and rose perfectly straight and well-defined, to the height of twenty degrees. Its color was a beautiful bright red, and its width equal to that of a broad rainbow; the clouds around were variegated with the finest colors, and the pageant continued about fifteen minutes.

On Saturday, September third, the first newspaper printed in Lynn, was published by Mr. Charles Frederic Lummus, with the title of the Lynn Weekly Mirror, edited by Alonzo Lewis.

A comet was visible in October, on the right of the Pleiades, with a train about six degrees in length.

Hon. William Gray died at Boston, on the third of November, aged 75 years. He was born at Lynn, June 27, 1750. His father, Mr. Abraham Gray, born January 13, 1715, was one of the first shoe manufacturers in Lynn, who employed journeymen and apprentices. He received such an education as could at that time be obtained in a town school. On his arrival at manhood, he entered extensively into the European and East India trades, and by his industry, ability, and uncommon success, accumulated an amount of property which few individuals in America have ever surpassed. His great success in trade gave an impulse to the mercantile business of Salem, and the amount which he added to the prosperity of that ancient and respectable town, occasioned the following epigram:

‘Salem and Lynn for Gray’s birth now contest;  
Lynn gains the palm, but Salem fares the best.’

After the embargo, Mr. Gray removed to Boston, and in the years 1810 and 1811, was elected Lieutenant Governor. His sons are among the most respectable lawyers and merchants in the city of Boston.

**1826.** The coldest day this winter was February first, when the thermometer was sixteen degrees below zero.

A schooner, loaded with six hundred bushels of corn, struck on a rock off the mouth of Saugus river, on the twelfth of April, and sunk.

The festival of St. John, June 24, was celebrated at Lynn, by Mount Carmel Lodge, and five other lodges. The address was delivered by Hon. Caleb Cushing, of Newburyport.

The Lynn Institution for Savings was incorporated on the twentieth of June. A Temperance Society was formed on the twentieth of December.

The Quaker meeting-house in Boston, with the burial ground adjoining, having been long disused, and few or none of the

society remaining in the city, it was thought best to remove the bones. The remains of one hundred and nine persons were taken up and removed to the Quaker burial ground at Lynn. Mr. Joseph Hussey, who had two sisters buried at Boston, was unwilling that they should be removed with the rest, and caused their remains, so dear to his memory, to be deposited in the cemetery of King's Chapel.

**1827.** Micajah Collins, a much respected minister of the society of Friends, died on the thirtieth of January, aged 62 years. He was a son of Enoch and Rebecca Collins, and was born April 19, 1764. His father died when he was young, but his mother was careful of his education, and he became serious at an early age. For nearly thirty years he was a teacher of the Friends' school, and was greatly beloved by his pupils. He was for about twenty-six years an approved minister, and in that capacity made several visits to different parts of the Union. He married Hannah Chase, of Salem. He was a good teacher, a beloved and virtuous man, and died in the assurance of a blessed immortality.

On the eleventh of April, the First Congregational meeting-house was removed from the centre of the Common to the corner of Commercial street. Its form was changed, a new steeple added, and it was dedicated on the seventeenth of October.

On the thirtieth of April, Mr. Paul Newhall was drowned from a fishing boat, at Swampscot, in attempting to pass within Dread Ledge. His body was found uninjured, thirty-nine days after; having, it was said, been caused to rise by heavy thunder, which agitated the water.

On the night of Thursday, May tenth, a schooner from Kennebec, loaded with hay and wood, was driven by a storm upon Lynn beach, and dismasted.

The anniversary of Independence was this year celebrated at Woodend. In the procession were thirteen Misses, dressed in white, wearing chaplets of roses, representing the thirteen original states; and eleven younger Misses, representing the new states. They recited a responsive chorus, written for the occasion, and an oration was delivered by the author of this history.

A son of Mr. Ezra Brown, named Edwin, aged twelve years, was drowned on the eighth of July, while bathing in the harbor.

On Tuesday evening, August twenty-eighth, a most beautiful pageant was displayed in the heavens. During the first part of the evening, the northern lights were uncommonly luminous; and at half past nine, a broad and brilliant arch was formed, which spanned the entire heaven, from east to west. No one, who did not behold it, can easily imagine its splendor and sublimity.



On several evenings in September, the Northern lights were exceedingly luminous, sometimes so bright as to cast shadows.

In the month of November were several great and drifting snow storms, and the weather was colder than had been known at that season for many years. It was so cold, that it froze a large water cistern solid, and burst it.

**1828.** On the second of May, a whale was cast ashore at Whale Beach, Swampscot, measuring sixty feet in length, and twenty-five barrels of oil were extracted from it.

An oration was delivered, on the fourth of July, by Rev. James Diman Green. His connexion with the Second Congregational Society, was dissolved, at his request, on the fourth of August.

Flora, a black woman, died on the first of October, aged one hundred and thirteen years. She was born in Africa, and related many interesting anecdotes of her country. Her father was one of the chiefs, and when he died, they built a house over him, as they considered it an indignity to suffer the rain to fall on his grave. One day a party of slave dealers came and set fire to their happy and peaceful village. Her mother was unable to run so fast as the rest, and as Flora was unwilling to escape without her, she remained, and was taken. She had two husbands and five children in Africa, and three husbands and five children in America. She was a sensible and purely pious woman, and was greatly respected.

In a storm, on the twenty-second of November, a schooner, belonging to Freeport, was cast upon the Lobster Rocks. The crew, with a lady passenger, immediately left the vessel, which was found in the morning, drifted upon Chelsea beach.

The Lynn Lyceum was established, December twenty-third.

**1829.** One of the most beautiful appearances of nature was presented on the morning of Saturday, the tenth of January. A heavy mist had fallen on the preceding evening, and when the sun rose, the whole expanse of hill and plain displayed the most enchanting and dazzling prospect of glittering frost. The tall and branching trees were bent, by the weight of ice, into graceful arches, and resembled magnificent chandeliers, glittering with burnished silver. As far as the eye could reach, all was one resplendent surface of polished ice; and in some places, the trees which stood in colonnades, were bent till their tops touched together, and formed long arcades of crystal, decorated with brilliant pearls, and sparkling with diamonds. But the scene in the open village, although so highly beautiful, was far exceeded by the magnificent lustre of the woods. The majestic hemlocks bent their heavy branches to the ground, loaded as with a weight of gold, and formed delightful bowers, sparkling

with gems, and illuminated with colored light. The evergreen cedars were covered with crystal gold, and glowed with emeralds of the deepest green. The silver tops of the graceful birches crossed each other, like the gothic arches of some splendid temple; while the slender shafts, and the glittering rocks, resembled columns, and altars, and thrones; and the precipitous cliffs looked down, like towers and battlements of silver; and far above all, the tall pines glittered in the frosty air, like the spires of a thousand cathedrals, overlaid with transparent gold, and burnished by the cloudless sun. This beautiful and surprising exhibition continued undisturbed for two whole days. On the third morning, the warm fingers of Aurora found the frozen chords which upheld the glittering show. They severed at the touch — and from lofty spire and stately elm, came showering gems and pearls, that tinkled as they bounded on the crystal plain. The ice, which had confined the mighty arms of aged forest trees, came crashing down, breaking the frosted shrubs beneath, and sending through the woods a mingled sound, like falling towers, and the far dash of waters. The admirer of the works of nature, who, during the continuance of this beautiful scene, was in the majestic woods, will never forget their indescribable splendor, or doubt the power and skill of Him, who, with such slight means as the twilight vapor and the midnight mist, can form an arch of fire in heaven, or create an exhibition of glory and grandeur on earth, so far surpassing the utmost beauty of the works of man.

In the snow storm, on the sixth of February, a woman perished on Farrington's Hill, on the turnpike, one mile eastward of the Lynn Hotel. Another great storm commenced on the twentieth, when several vessels, belonging to Swampscot, were driven out to sea. One of them remained five days, and went on shore at Chatham, where the crew were much frozen.

On the night of the fifth of March, a schooner, loaded with coffee, struck on Shag Rocks, on the south side of Nahant, and was entirely dashed to pieces. No traces of the crew were found, and it is probable that they all perished.

Dr. John Flagg Gardner died at Ipswich, on the fourteenth of March, aged thirty-five years. He was a son of Dr. James Gardner, of Lynn, and was born May 27, 1794. He graduated at Harvard University in 1813, and after completing his studies with his father, and at the medical school in Boston, he settled in the practice of medicine at Ipswich. He was esteemed for his ability as a physician, and beloved for his disposition as a gentleman.

Great excitement was occasioned this year in Lynn, as it had been in many other towns and cities for some years previous, on the subject of Freemasonry. On the first of April, Mr.



Jacob Allen, of Braintree, gave an exhibition of some of the alleged mysteries of that institution, at Liberty Hall; and on the sixth, the inhabitants, in town meeting, voted, that they regarded Freemasonry 'as a great moral evil,' and its existence 'as being dangerous to all free governments,' and gave Mr. Allen the use of the town hall to continue his exhibitions.

Mr. Joseph Fuller died on the seventh of November, aged 82 years. He was a patriotic citizen and a benevolent man. He was for several years a selectman, and in 1820 was chosen a delegate to amend the state constitution. His son, Hon. Joseph Fuller, was born March 29, 1772, and died in 1815, aged 43 years. He was six times chosen representative, and was elected a senator for Essex county in 1812. He was also the first President of the Lynn Mechanics' Bank, and an associate Judge of the Court of Sessions.

Rev. David Hatch Barlow was ordained minister of the Second Congregational Society, on the ninth of December.

The canker worms, for seven years, have been making great ravages among the fruit trees. Many orchards have borne but little fruit during that time, and the leaves and blossoms have been so thoroughly devoured, that the trees have appeared as if scorched by a fire.

In a very great thunder shower, on the thirtieth of July, a barn on Nahant, belonging to Stephen Codman, Esq., was struck by lightning, and Mr. William Hogan, a carpenter, was killed.

In September, a stone beacon, twenty feet in height, was erected on the outer cliff of Dread Ledge, by order of the United States' government, at an expense of one thousand dollars. It was thrown down by a storm, on the thirty-first of October.

The first complete Map of Lynn was made this year, from a particular survey, by Alonzo Lewis.

**1830.** The publication of a second newspaper, entitled the Lynn Record, was begun, January 23d, by Alonzo Lewis.

One of the highest tides ever known happened on the 26th of March. It rose about five feet higher than common high tides, passing entirely over the Long Beach, and making Nahant an island. It also flowed over the southern part of Market street; and, passing up the Mill brook, swept off a quantity of wood from the house in Bridge street.

On the 12th of July, Mr. Joseph Blaney, aged fifty-two years, went out in a fishing boat from Swampscot, when a shark over-set his boat and killed him.

The meeting house of the Third Methodist Society, built this year, in South street, was dedicated on the 3d of August. The first minister was Rev. Rufus Spaulding.

A great tempest of rain and wind, on the 26th of August, occasioned very great damage to the corn and fruit trees.

On the 4th of September, a boat in the harbor, in which two boys were playing, was overset, and Joseph Thomson, aged 15 years, son of William Thomson, was drowned.

Donald MacDonald, a native of Inverness, in Scotland, died in the Lynn Almshouse, on the 4th of October, aged 108 years. He was in the battle of Quebec, when Wolf fell, and was one of the few whom Washington conducted from the forest of blood when Braddock was killed by the Indians.

Vegetation this year was abundant; English hay was eight dollars a ton; and more apples were gathered than in all the seven previous years.

Another great storm tide, on the 29th of November, came in high and furious, doing great damage to the Long Beach, by sweeping down the ridge and throwing it into the harbor.

On Wednesday, December 1st, there were two shocks of an earthquake, about eight o'clock in the evening.

On the morning of the fourth, half an hour after midnight, a meteor, exceedingly brilliant, passed south of the moon, which was then shining near the meridian.

The northern lights made an uncommonly rich display on the evening of the 11th, assuming the most fanciful forms, changing into the appearance of tall spires, towers, arches, and warriors armed with long spears.

**1831.** Dr. Aaron Lummus died on the 5th of January, aged 74 years. He resided in Lynn nearly fifty years, and was one of the most popular physicians in the town. He married Eunice Coffin in 1786, and had five sons; Aaron, John, Edward, Charles Frederic, and Thomas Jefferson. In 1823 and 1824, he was a Senator of Essex county.

A great storm commenced on the 15th of January, in which a schooner, belonging to Stephen Smith, was torn from her fastenings at his wharf, and dashed to pieces against the embankment on Deer island, throwing down about sixty feet of the new granite wall, recently built by the United States government.

Maria Augusta Fuller, daughter of Hon. Joseph Fuller, died on the 19th of January, aged 24 years. She was a young lady of estimable character, and a poetess of considerable merit. She wrote many pieces, both in prose and poetry, with the signature of Finella; and was perhaps the most talented and imaginative female which Lynn has produced.

In August, the sun and the atmosphere, for many days, presented a smoky appearance, of a greenish blue color. The same phenomenon was noticed by M. Arago, the French astronomer, at Paris. On the evening of the 26th, the moon rose about fifteen minutes before nine; and half an hour after, there was a



shower in the northwest, and on the cloud a perfect and beautiful lunar rainbow was depicted, of a yellowish color.

This year the small pox made its appearance in Chestnut street, Woodend. Two persons were removed to a little building, which had been placed on the woodland road to Blood's swamp. One of them, Lydia, wife of Mr. Ephraim Brown, died on the 14th of August. Mr. Amos Allen recovered. Richard Haseltine, an orphan boy, nine years old, was carried in a boat to Rainsford's island, and returned well.

Another beacon was erected on Dread Ledge, at Swampscot, on the 7th of November, — an obelisk of granite, twenty-five feet in height, and three feet square at the base. On the 22d, there was a singularly mingled tempest, very violent, for an hour in the morning, with rain, hail, snow, thunder and lightning, a strong east wind, and a high tide. The lightning struck at Breed's End, and a vessel was driven ashore on Phillip's Beach, and another on Nahant Beach.

Dr. James Gardner died December 26, aged 69 years. He was born at Woburn, in 1762, entered the army of the Revolution at an early age, and on the return of peace devoted himself to study, and graduated at Harvard in 1788. He came to Lynn in 1792, and commenced the practice of medicine. The next year he married Susannah, daughter of Dr. John Flagg. He was a skilful and popular physician, and possessed the manners of a gentleman.

This year, Mr. John Alley enclosed about twenty acres of water, by a dam from his wharf to the marsh, thus making a pond, on which he built a grist mill, and afterward a fulling mill.

On the last of December the thermometer was eleven degrees below zero.

**1832.** The Lynn Anti-Slavery Society was formed on the 25th of April.

Rev. Otis Rockwood was dismissed from the pastoral charge of the First Congregational Church, on the 12th of May. Rev. David Peabody was ordained pastor of the same church on the 15th November.

This year the Tuscan chapel at Nahant was erected, by subscriptions made by gentlemen of Boston. Religious services are performed during the warm and visiting season, by the ministers of Boston, each of whom preaches one Sunday.

A Whaling Company was formed, and five ships employed; three of which were built at Lynn. They harbored in Saugus river; but on the crossing of the rail-road, in 1838, they were removed to Boston.

**1833.** On the 16th of January, Mr. David Taylor's store, in Ash street, was burnt.

On the 2d of February, Rev. David H. Barlow relinquished the care of the Second Congregational Church; and Rev. Samuel D. Robbins was ordained pastor of the same church on the 13th of November.

On the 14th of February, the new Baptist meeting house on the north side of the common was dedicated.

One of the most remarkable phenomena ever witnessed in New England, was a shower of meteors. It commenced soon after three o'clock, on the morning of Wednesday, the 13th of November, and continued until day. There were many thousands, which fell in all directions, like flakes of snow. Most of them were small, but some of them appeared as large as seven stars combined in one. The meteors seemed to proceed chiefly from a point about fifteen degrees southeast from the zenith, and the display was noticed in Philadelphia and Baltimore.

**1834.** On the 28th of May, several persons destroyed the curious cave in the Dungeon Rock, under an imagination that they might obtain a treasure. They placed a keg of powder in the cave, which, on its explosion, blew out the lower portion of the rock, causing the great mass above to fall, and thus destroying the cavern. This is the third time that curious and wonderful caves in Lynn have been destroyed by wantonness. It is much to be regretted that this rage for destructiveness cannot cease. Such persons ought to be confined, as destroyers of God's beautiful works.

On the 31st of July, Mr. ——— Durant ascended in a balloon from Boston, passed over Nahant, and descended into the water, from which, in about fifteen minutes, he was taken up by a schooner.

On the 12th of August, Mr. John Mudge's barn, in Shepard street, was burnt by lightning. The Mechanics Bank, in Broad street, was built this year.

**1835.** On the 22d of April, Rev. David Peabody resigned the pastoral charge of the First Congregational Church.

A comet appeared, in the constellation of Ursa Major, on the 9th of October, and continued in view about two weeks.

On the 4th of November, Hezekiah Chase's mill, at the mouth of Strawberry brook, was burnt.

The Christian Church, in Silsbee street, was organized on the 5th of November; the first minister was Rev. Philemon R. Russell, who preached there about five years.

On Tuesday evening, November 17, the northern lights were



very lustrous, and presented the singular appearance of a splendid illuminated crown in the zenith.

On the 10th of December, the First Universalist Meeting House, in Union street, was dedicated. The 16th was the coldest day of the season, the thermometer being fourteen degrees below zero. On the evening of the 17th, Mr. Rufus Newhall's barn, in Essex street, was burnt. On the 28th, Lieutenant Robert Mudge, of Lynn, aged 26 years, was killed by the Seminole Indians, near Withlacoochie, in Florida, three persons only escaping in a company of 108.

**1836.** This year, the second attempt was made to form an Episcopal Church. It was commenced on the 7th of January, by three persons, under the name of Christ Church. On the fifth of November, a handsome rustic edifice, with diamond windows, and four Tuscan columns, was erected on the north side of the common. Rev. Milton Ward was the first minister.

The Second Universalist Society was organized on the 9th of March. They purchased the old meeting house, vacated by the First Congregational Society, now standing on the corner of Commercial street. Their first minister was Rev. Dunbar B. Harris.

The winter was very long and cold; snow began on the 23d of November, and sleighing continued until the 15th of March, sixteen weeks.

Rev. Parsons Cooke was installed pastor of the First Congregational Church on the 4th of May.

This year, Henry A. Breed, Esq. built the large brick factory on Waterhill, for calico printing and dying. He dug a new pond, comprising about an acre, for a reservoir. He also laid out several new streets, and built nearly four hundred convenient cottages, and other buildings, and a wharf.

Dr. Richard Haseltine died on the 10th of July. He was born at Concord, N. H., November 28th, 1773, married Phebe Carter in 1799, and came to Lynn in 1817.

On the 23d of September, a young man jumped off the precipice of High Rock, a descent of sixty feet, and, strange to tell, walked away uninjured!

A fire in Front street, on the evening of the 26th of October, burnt Mr. Boynton Viall's stable, and the shoe manufactory of Isaac B. Cobb, Esq.

The brig Shamrock, Jortin, of Boston, with a cargo of sugar and molasses, was wrecked on the Long Beach, on the 17th of December.

**1837.** On the 15th of January, at two o'clock in the morning, there was an earthquake.

The new meeting house of the First Congregational Society was dedicated on the 1st of February.

On the first of June, Mr. William Newhall was drowned, by falling overboard from a sloop, near Nahant. On the 20th, the schooner Triton, of Waldoborough, loaded with wood, was wrecked on Fishing Point, Swampscot. On the 21st, Lewis A. Lauriat ascended in a ballon from Winnisimmet, and landed in the woods near Lynn Dye House.

Augustus, son of Israel Perkins, aged fourteen years, was drowned on the 1st of July, while bathing in Alley's mill pond, near the wharf.

The Fourth of July was celebrated at Lover's Leap, by a party of ladies and gentlemen of Lynn, Boston, and Salem, and several songs, written by the Lynn Bard, were sung.

The Episcopal Church, on the north side of the common, was consecrated on Thursday, July 20th. Sermon by Bishop Griswold.

In August, a survey of Lynn Beach and Harbor was made by Alonzo Lewis, under the direction of Congress; and a plan submitted for the purpose of erecting a sea wall, the whole length of the beach, at an expense of \$37,000; but though encouragement was given for a grant, yet none was obtained.

**1838.** Charles Frederic Lummus died on the 20th of April, aged 37 years. He was the printer and publisher of the Lynn Mirror, the first newspaper in Lynn. He was an excellent musician, and a choice spirit. Few young men in Lynn were ever more extensively beloved, or more deserved to be. But thou art dead! 'Alas! poor Yorick!' Thine is a loss to be thought about, and thou shalt long live in our love.

The ladies of Lynn held a great Fair at the Town Hall on the 4th of July, for benevolent purposes. Frances Maria Lewis was principal, and nearly \$500 were obtained.

The Eastern Rail-road, from Salem to Boston, passing through Lynn, was opened for public travel on the 28th of August. Before this time, a few stages had accommodated all the eastern travel; but now the number of passengers, to and from Boston, so rapidly increased, that for the first three months, the average was three hundred and forty-eight persons each day. The company for effecting this great and convenient enterprise was incorporated on the 14th of April, 1836. The road has since been extended to Portsmouth, at an expense of about \$2,300,000. It was a magnificent project, happily accomplished, and it may be regarded not merely as a civil convenience, but as a work of great moral influence, tending to break down the barriers of sectional prejudice, and to promote feelings of benevolence and refinement, by bringing many persons of both sexes into habits of social and daily intercourse.



On the twenty-eighth of September, two brakemen, Tyler and Baker, who were standing upon the top of a car, were instantly killed, by being struck against the overhead framework of the little bridge at Breed's wharf.

The Lynn Freeman, the third newspaper in Lynn, was commenced on the tenth of November.

**1839.** On the twenty-seventh of May died Frances Maria, wife of Alonzo Lewis — a woman amiable, talented, virtuous, and greatly beloved. Her funeral was attended by perhaps as great a number of persons as were ever present at the interment of any lady in Lynn, to whom her active benevolence, and her worth as a teacher, had greatly endeared her.

Amid the attention which is given to the various concerns of humanity, surely one page may be spared as a tribute to the excellence of Woman. In the course of History, the virtues and the worth of Man are delineated in all the features of strong and admirable portraiture; but Woman — the inspiration of existence, the soul of humanity, without whom the world would be but a resplendent desert, and life itself a burden to its lordly and lonely possessor — Woman is overlooked with indifference, as if she were not entitled even to a small share in the record of human events. When man is consigned to the tomb of his fathers, his worth is recorded on monuments of marble, and his virtues illuminate the page of history; but the grave of woman is passed in silence and neglect. She who is the mother of man, the wife of his bosom, the daughter of his affection — she who has shared all his dangers, and encouraged his footsteps up the steep ascent of fame — she who in the hour of sickness has been his comforter, in the day of adversity his support, and in the time of trial his guardian angel — generous, virtuous, unassuming woman — is permitted to go to her everlasting sleep, with no mention of her name, no record of her virtues. Poetry indeed has extolled her, but even poetry has praised her but half. It has represented her chiefly as a thing of beauty, an object of youthful admiration, a creature of light and fancy, full of fascination and the blandishments of love. Poetry and romance follow her in the sunny days of youth and beauty; but when the time of her maturity and usefulness arrives, they abandon her for other pursuits, and leave her alone to encounter the trials, and sickness, and sorrows of home. It is there, in the unobserved paths of domestic life, that the value of woman is to be estimated. There may be found unwavering faith, untiring affection, hope that endures all afflictions, and love that bears all trials. There may be found the smile of unfailing friendship, mantling over a breaking heart — the unobtrusive tear of sympathy, falling in the silence of solitude. There may be found a

being, like a spirit from another world, watching through the long dark hours of night, over the form of manhood, prostrate and wasting by slow consuming sickness, and performing all the numerous duties, and encountering all the innumerable trials of common life, with the enduring patience of years, and with no reward but the satisfaction of her own secret heart. Man performs the public toils of life, and participates the honors of the world and the recompense of fame; but woman, who has formed man for his high destiny, and whose virtues and amiable qualities constitute the refinement of society, has no share in such rewards. But history cannot do justice to her merits; she must be satisfied with the living admiration of her excellence on earth, and the everlasting remuneration of her virtues in heaven.

On the seventh of June, Rev. Samuel D. Robbins resigned the care of the Second Congregational Church.

One of the greatest storms for many years commenced on Sunday, December fifteenth, and continued three days. It consisted of snow and rain, and the wind blew a gale, which did great damage to the shipping in many places. The schooner Catharine, from Philadelphia for Boston, was wrecked on the rocks near Bass Point, at Nahant. Two of the crew were instantly drowned, and another was so injured, by being dashed upon the rocks, that he soon died. Captain Nichols and one man were saved. At Gloucester, twenty vessels were wrecked, and seventeen dead bodies were picked up on the beach.

**1840.** On the first of January, Rev. William Gray Swett was ordained minister of the Second Congregational Church.

On the evening of Sunday, October twenty-fifth, a scene of terrific grandeur was exhibited. A tempest suddenly rose, in which the thunder was exceedingly heavy, so as to shake the houses like an earthquake; and the lightning was intense, making the whole atmosphere, at times, appear as if it were a flame; and in the house, it seemed as if one were enveloped with fire. At the same time snow fell and covered the ground. The exhibition was singular and awfully sublime.

On the eleventh of November, during a storm, the tide rose higher than it probably had done since 1815. The wind had been easterly for several weeks, and the swell of the waters was immense; passing for several days entirely over the Long Beach, so that not only the harbor, but the marshes of Lynn, Saugus and Chelsea, were a portion of the mighty sea. There was no safety in approaching near the level shore; but it was a grand and terrible sight, to stand upon Sagamore hill, or some other elevation, and view the fearful devastation of the waters. Nahant appeared to be severed forever from the main, and ocean to be passing the bounds of its ancient decree.



One fact appears evident from recent observation — either the sea is encroaching upon our shores by elevation, or the marshes are sinking. There are strong indications, by marks upon the rocks, that the ocean once broke against the cliffs of Saugus; and on examination of the marshes, we are led to the almost irresistible conclusion, that the whole region, now occupied by them, was once a portion of the sea. By some means, not easily explained, these marshes were formed, and covered, or filled, with trees. The trunks and stumps of those trees, in some places bearing marks of the axe! are now buried two or three feet below the surface of the marsh! and twice that depth beneath the level of high tides! — so that the sea, after having been shut out by some great revolution, appears to be returning to claim what were perhaps its ancient limits. Another proof that the waters are gaining upon the land, is the fact, that the creeks are much wider now than they formerly were; and the trunk of a pine, which a few years since, projected three feet into the river, now projects twenty feet.

**1841.** The Lyceum Hall in Market street was built this year. During several years the public attention has been much excited by the subjects of Phrenology and Mesmerism. Many lectures have been given, by professors from Europe and America, and many interesting experiments performed, to the satisfaction of many; but some still remain incredulous. The most popular lecturer on Mesmerism is Dr. Robert H. Collyer, of London.

This year, Joseph G. Joy, Esq. built his Log Cabin, at Nahant, from a plan by Alonzo Lewis.

**1842.** Mr. Enoch Curtin died on the twenty-eighth of May. He was born September 25, 1794, and married Susan Ireson. He was a man of estimable qualities, and possessed great poetical talent. He had a very happy faculty for the production of odes and songs, adapted to particular occasions. His mind was intellectual, refined, and noble, and he was widely esteemed and beloved.

The Lynn Natural History Society was formed on the third of August. It has been very successful in the collection of interesting natural curiosities, and promises to become a source of great information and utility, as well as of amusement.

On the seventh of September, a boy from Salem, William Henry Ropes, aged 14 years, was killed by the Railroad cars, while walking with his father, on the track, near the crossing of Burrill street.

Another great storm happened Friday, the third of December, during which a singular phenomenon occurred. It was high tide about ten o'clock in the forenoon, and the tide rose nearly

three feet higher than common spring tides. Soon after eleven, when the water had ebbed more than a foot, the wind changed, and brought the tide in again above two feet; so that vessels and timbers, landed by the first tide, were set afloat by the second. This is the only instance on record of a double tide, since the remarkable one in 1635.

**1843.** Dr. Charles O. Barker died on the eighth of January. He was born at Andover, March 8, 1802, graduated at Cambridge in 1822, and married Augusta, daughter of Rembrandt Peale, in 1828. His practice was extensive and successful, and he was beloved by all who formed his acquaintance.

Rev. William Gray Swett, pastor of the Second Congregational Church, died on the fifteenth of February. He was born in Salem, July 15, 1808, and graduated at Cambridge in 1828. He went to Cuba in 1830, for the benefit of his health, where he spent upwards of two years. In July, 1836, he was ordained at Lexington; and on the first of January, 1840, was installed at Lynn. He was a practical preacher, and was greatly beloved by his people. His death was a great loss to his society and to the town; for he was a man of talent, of active benevolence, and of sterling worth. He united high classical attainments with a manly piety, and knew enough of human nature to mingle with all its sympathies, and partake of all its innocent and social enjoyments.

In a sudden storm of snow and rain, on the morning of March seventeenth, before day break, the schooner Thomas, Captain William Sprowl, of Belfast, loaded with wood, was wrecked on the southern end of the Long Beach. There were seven men on board, five of whom were drowned, by the swamping of the long boat, as they were attempting to gain the shore.

A splendid comet made its appearance this year. It was observed on the first of February, in the day time, passed the sun on the twenty-sixth of that month, and was in its most favorable position for observation on the night of the eighteenth of March. Its train then extended from *Zeta* in Eridanus, to *Eta* in Lepus — thirty-eight degrees in length. It was very brilliant and beautiful.

The winter was very cold. I crossed the harbor on the seventeenth of March, and the ice was then strong enough to bear a horse. On the fourth of April the snow in many places was three feet deep, and on the eighth, a man drove an ox sled, loaded with wood, across Spring Pond. On the twentieth of April, the ice was still thick on the ponds. There were heavy frosts on the first and second of June.

President John Tyler attended the celebration of the Battle of Bunker Hill, on the seventeenth of June; and in that week, 20,600 people passed over the Eastern Railroad.



Lewis A. Lauriat made an ascent from Winnisimmet on the fourth of July, and descended amid thousands of spectators, near the Lynn Bard's cottage, at Sagamore Hill.

This year, Theophilus N. Breed built his factory, for making cutlery and shoemaker's tools, on Oak street.

In August, about twenty of the Penobscot Indians came to Lynn, and encamped, some at High Rock, and others at Nahant.

Rev. John Pierpont, Jr. was ordained minister of the Second Congregational Church, on the eleventh of October.

For about four years past, it has been noticed, that the Sycamore trees have been leafless, decayed, and dying. It is supposed that their decay has been owing to heavy frosts, blighting them, after they had budded early.

Sagamore Hall, near the Lynn Depot, was burnt in the night of the twenty-fifth of November. Loss about \$3000. The town has been remarkably exempt from losses of this kind—this being the only great fire for ten years.



Canova's Washington.

## CHAPTER XII.

Shoemaking at Lynn — Tanneries — Morocco Manufactories — Fishery — Public Buildings and Societies — Climate — Sea Bathing — Census — Cottages at Nahant.

Spare none but such as go in clouted shoon,  
For such are thrifty, honest men.

SHAKESPEARE.

The American foot shall be as celebrated as the Phidian nose.

WILLIS.



ADIES' SHOES began to be made in Lynn at a very early period; and that business has long been the principal occupation of the inhabitants. Shoemaking is a very ancient and respectable employment, for we read in Homer, of princes manufacturing their own shoes. They have been made of various materials — hides, flax, silk, cloth, wood, iron, silver, and gold — and in great variety of shape, plain and ornamental. Among the Jews they were made of leather, linen, and wood. Soldiers wore them of brass and iron, tied with thongs. To put off the shoes was an act of veneration. The Asiatics and Egyptians wore shoes made of the bark of papyrus. Among the Greeks, the shoe generally reached to the mid leg, like what we now call bootees. Ladies, as a mark of distinction, wore sandals — a sort of loose shoe, something like a modern slipper. Xenophon relates that the ten thousand Greeks, who followed young Cyrus, wanting shoes in their retreat, covered their feet with raw hides, which occasioned them great injury. The Roman shoes were of two kinds — the *calceus*, which covered the whole foot; and the *solea*, which covered only the sole, and was fastened with thongs. Ladies of rank wore white, and sometimes red shoes; other women wore black. The shoes of some of the Roman emperors were enriched with precious stones. It was generally regarded as a mark of effeminacy for men to wear shoes. Phocion, Cato, and other noble Romans, had no covering for their feet when they appeared in public. In the ninth and tenth centuries, the greatest princes of Europe wore wooden shoes, or wooden soles fastened with leather thongs. In the eleventh century, the upper part of the shoe was made of leather, and the sole of wood.



The Saxons wore shoes, or *scoh*, with thongs. Bede's account of Cuthbert is curious. He says: 'When the saint had washed the feet of those who came to him, they compelled him to take off his own shoes, that his feet might also be made clean; for so little did he attend to his bodily appearance, that he often kept his shoes, which were of leather, on his feet for several months together.'\*

In the Dialogues of Elfric, composed to instruct the Anglo Saxon youth in Latin, we find that the shoemaker had a very comprehensive trade. 'My craft is very useful and necessary to you. I buy hides and skins, and prepare them by my art, and make of them shoes of various kinds, and none of you can winter without my craft.' Among the articles which he fabricates, he mentions — ancle leathers, shoes, leather hose, bridle thongs, trappings, leather bottles, flasks, halters, pouches and wallets.†

In the year 1090, in the reign of William Rufus, the great dandy Robert was called the Horned, because he wore shoes with long points, stuffed, turned up, and twisted like horns. These kind of shoes became fashionable, and the toes continued to increase in extent, until, in the time of Richard II, in 1390, they had attained such an enormous extent as to be fastened to the garter by a chain of silver or gold. The clergy declaimed vehemently against this extravagance; but the fashion continued, even for several centuries. In the year 1463, the Parliament of England passed an act, prohibiting shoes with pikes more than two inches in length, under penalties to maker and wearer; and those who would not comply were declared excommunicate. In the year 1555, a company of Cordwainers was incorporated in old Boston, England. By their charter, it was ordered, 'That no persons shall set up, within the said borough, as Cordwainers, until such time as they can sufficiently cut and make a boot or shoe, to be adjudged by the wardens . . . that if any foreigner, or person who did not serve his apprenticeship in the said borough, shall be admitted to his freedom, he shall then pay to the wardens £3 2s. 8d. . . and that no fellow of this corporation, his journeyman or servant, shall work on the Sabbath day, either in town or country.'‡

Shoes in their present form came into use in the year 1633, a short time after the first settlement of this country. The first shoemakers known at Lynn, were Philip Kertland and Edmund Bridges, both of whom came over in 1635. The business gradually increased with the increase of the inhabitants; and many

---

\* Bede, Vit. Cuthbert, p. 243.

† Turner's History Anglo Saxons, 3, 111.

‡ Thompson's History of Boston, Eng. p. 82.

of the farmers, who worked in the fields in the summer, made shoes in their shops in the winter. The papers relating to the Corporation of Shoemakers, mentioned by Johnson in 1651, are unfortunately lost; having probably been destroyed by the mob in 1765. As the first settlers introduced many of their customs from England, the privileges were probably similar to those conferred, in 1555, on the Cordwainers of old Boston.

The term Cordwainer, as a designation of this craft, has long usurped the place of Ladies' Shoemaker. This word had its origin from Cordova, a city in the south of Spain, where a peculiar kind of leather was manufactured for ladies' shoes. The word in the Spanish is Cordoban; in the Portuguese, Cordovam; and in the French, Cordouan; whence the term Cordouaniers, or Cordwainers. In the eighth century, the descendants of Alaric, in revenge at being passed by in the choice of a king, called the Arabians to their aid. They came, and Roderic, the last of the Goths, fell in the seven days' battle, at Tarik, in 711. In 756, Abderrhaman made himself master of Spain, and established his caliphate at Cordova. During the Arabian power, agriculture, commerce, the arts and sciences, flourished in Spain; and in that period, the celebrated Cordova leather was introduced. It was made of the skins of the goats of Tafilet, since denominated Morocco. It was altogether superior to any thing which had been previously used for the manufacture of ladies' shoes. It was at first colored black, and afterwards red, by the use of cochineal.

At the beginning, women's shoes at Lynn, were made of neat's leather, or woollen cloth; only they had a nicer pair of white silk for the wedding-day; which were carefully preserved, as something too delicate for ordinary use. About the year 1670, shoes began to be cut with broad straps, for buckles, which were worn by women, as well as by men. In 1727, square-toed shoes, and buckles for ladies, went out of fashion; though buckles continued to be worn by men till after the revolution. The sole-leather was all worked with the flesh-side out. In 1750, John Adam Dagyr, a Welshman, gave great impulse and notoriety to the business, by producing shoes equal to the best made in England. From that time the craft continued to flourish, until it became the principal business of the town. Fathers, sons, journeymen and apprentices, worked together, in a shop of one story in height, twelve feet square, with a fire-place in one corner, and a cutting-board in another. The finer quality of shoes were made with white and russet rands, stiched very fine, with white waxed thread. They were made with very sharp toes, and had wooden heels, covered with leather, from half an inch to two inches in height; called cross-cut, common, court; and Wurtemburgh heels. About the year 1800, wooden heels



were discontinued, and leather heels were used instead. In 1783, Mr. Ebenezer Breed introduced the use of Morocco leather; and at the commencement of the present century, two of the principal shoe manufacturers, were Mr. Amos Rhodes and Col. Samuel Brimblecom. Lynn is now the principal place in America for the production of ladies' shoes. There are 130 manufactories, employing about 3000 workmen, and about as many women binders. There are about Three Million Pairs of Shoes annually made, valued at nearly Two Million Dollars.

Many improvements have, within a few years, been introduced into the manufacture of shoes. Formerly all shoemakers sat at their employment, but that was found injurious to the health of many. In 1804, Thomas Parker, of England, invented the 'Standing Seat,' as it is called, which at first was sold for two guineas. Lasts were formerly made by hand, by a very slow process; but Mr. Richard Richards, of Lynn, now has a machine in operation, impelled by steam, in which lasts, of any required pattern, are shaped with great facility. The same gentleman has recently obtained a patent for a new Sole Cutter, which greatly relieves the labor of the mechanic.

Many Shoemakers have become eminent. Nilant has a book on shoes. Baudoin, a shoemaker, has a learned work on the ancient shoe, entitled '*De Solea Veterum.*' Hans Sack, a German shoemaker, wrote fifty volumes of prose. Robert Bloomfield composed that delightful poem, the Farmer's Boy, while at work on his bench, and wrote it down when he had finished the labor of the day. William Gifford, the editor of the London Quarterly Review, and the translator of Juvenal, served his apprenticeship with a cordwainer. John Pounds, of Portsmouth, while engaged in his daily work, contrived to educate some hundreds of the neighboring children. In our own country, Roger Sherman, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, was a shoemaker; and John Greenleaf Whittier left the manufacture of shoes for ladies' feet, to make verses for their boudoirs.

Poets in all ages have noticed the shoe as an important part of the dress, especially of a lady. In the time of Chaucer, the vamps of ladies' shoes were fashioned in the resemblance of a gothic church window. Shakspeare bestows an exquisite compliment on the manner of dressing the foot, when he says of a lady —

'Nay — her foot speaks.'

Butler, in his Hudibras, makes the hero of that inimitable poem pay his devoirs to his lady-love, in the following terms —

'Madam! I do, as is my duty,  
Honor the shadow of your shoe-tie!'

A certain critic, of more learning than good sense, once undertook to bestow an unusual quantity of censure on two of our own lines, in the description of a lady's person,

‘ But if one grace might more attention suit,  
It was the striking neatness of her foot.’

Now we think that every reader of good taste will agree with us, at least in admiring the idea which these lines are intended to convey.

Genteel Reader — for I trust I shall have many such — are you aware that you are now perhaps trampling the industry of Lynn beneath your feet! How often are we indebted to those of whom we think least, for many of our most valuable and salutary enjoyments. Look at that young lady, who might be taken by Brackett as a model for one of the graces, reclining in an easy chair, with her foot upon an ottoman. See the delicate shoe which fits as if it were formed by the hand of Apelles! Shakspeare (in his *Romeo and Juliet*) says — ‘ I would I were a glove upon that hand!’ How often have I wished — ‘ O, would I were a shoe upon *that* foot!’ Perhaps neither she who displays that elegant foot, nor the many who admire it, think that much of its grace is to be ascribed to some unknown individual on the shores of Lynn. Yet there, by the sound of the rippling waters, are thousands of men employed in manufacturing all manner of outer vestures for the delicate foot, and as many women engaged in binding and trimming them. There the village-lace and the ankle-tie have their origin — there the belle of the city may suit both her form and her taste with the newest and most delicately formed style, either for the boudoir or the ball-room, with its classic shape and its Parisian title — there the rustic maid may procure the laced buskin which shall add a new grace to her modest beauty — and there the mother may find the substantial fabric, adapted to domestic comfort for her own foot; or the soft tissue, with its congenial trimming of gossamer and gold, for the foot of her loved little one. So long as the foot needs to be protected, so long will the manufactures of Lynn flourish.

The tanning of sole leather was commenced in Lynn at an early period. In 1630, Francis Ingalls built a tannery at Swampscot, which was the first in the United States. In 1720, John Lewis opened a tannery in Boston street. In 1820, there were six tanneries, but in consequence of the importation of leather from Philadelphia and other places, they were all discontinued before 1833.

In the year 1800, William Rose introduced the manufacture of Morocco leather, in a factory by the brook, on the south side of the common. There are now three tanneries and eight manufactories of Morocco in Lynn.



The other principal business of the town is the cod and mackerel fishery, which is very productive. There are fifteen schooners and about one hundred boats employed in the business at Swampscot; and a few boats are also engaged at Nahant. These two places supply Boston, and many country towns, with fish during the year; and, in summer, many hundred lobsters are daily sent into the markets.

There are, in the town, three grist mills, one mill for chocolate and spices, an establishment for the manufacture of paper hangings, a dye house, two factories for printing silks and calicoes, a manufactory of sashes, blinds, and bedsteads, a planing mill and a manufactory of cutlery and shoemakers' tools.

Lynn has thirteen churches, nine principal school houses, an academy, post office, lyceum, bank, two newspapers, (the *Washingtonian*, and *Essex County Whig*,) an institution for savings, two insurance companies, eleven fire engines, a social and circulating library, a natural history society, a temperance society, an anti-slavery society, two ladies' benevolent societies, several societies for providing watchers for the sick, and ten hotels. There are three military companies; the Lynn Artillery, Lynn Light Infantry, and Lynn Mechanics' Rifle Company, — all in a good state of discipline.

The climate of Lynn is generally healthy, but the prevalence of east winds is a subject of complaint for invalids, especially those afflicted with pulmonary disorders. That these winds are not generally detrimental to health is evident from the fact, that the people of Nahant, surrounded by the sea, and subject to all its breezes, are unusually healthy. From some cause, however, there are a great number of deaths by consumption. Formerly, a death by this disease was a rare occurrence, and then the individual was ill for many years, and the subjects were usually aged persons. In 1727, when a young man died of consumption at the age of nineteen, it was noticed as a remarkable circumstance; but now, young people frequently die of that disease after an illness of a few months. Of 316 persons, whose deaths were noticed in the First Parish for about twenty years previous to 1824, 112 were the subjects of consumption; and in some years since, more than half the deaths have been occasioned by that insidious malady. There is something improper and unnatural in this. It is doubtless owing to the habits of the people, to their confinement in close rooms, over hot stoves, and to their want of exercise, free air, and ablution. It is owing to their violation of some of the great laws of nature. To one accustomed, as I have always been, to ramble by the sea shore and on the hill top, to breathe the ocean wind and the mountain air, this close confinement of the shops would be a living death. Were it not for the social intercourse, I would as soon be con-

fined in a prison cell as in a room twelve feet square, with a hot stove, and six or eight persons breathing the heated air over and over again, long after it has been rendered unfit to sustain life. If mechanics find it convenient to work together in shops, they should build them longer and higher, and have them well ventilated. The subject of bathing, also, requires more attention. There are many people in Lynn, as there are in all other places, who never washed themselves all over in their lives, and who would as soon think of taking a journey through the air in a balloon as of going under water. How they contrive to exist I cannot imagine; they certainly do not exist in the highest degree of happiness, if happiness consist in the enjoyment of that free and buoyant mind which is nourished by pure air and clean water. Some of these water haters, a few years since, made a law, that boys should not bathe in sight of any house; yet they have furnished no bathing houses; and there are no secluded places, excepting where the lives of children would be endangered. Thus they not only refuse to bathe themselves, but prevent the young, by a heavy penalty, from enjoying one of the purest blessings and highest luxuries of existence. Perhaps nothing is more conducive to health than sea bathing. I do not wish for a return of the 'olden time,' with all its errors and absurdities, but I do desire a return to that simplicity which is born of purity.

By the census of 1840, Lynn contained 9,375 inhabitants. It is the second town in Essex county, the seventh in Massachusetts, and the thirty-sixth in the United States. The annual expenditures of the town are about \$18,000, of which \$6,000 are appropriated for the support of schools. Education has received considerable attention, but much remains to be done. The roads are good, the houses neat, and the inhabitants moral and industrious. In respect to the beauty of the scenery, and the equality of the people, there are few places where a residence is more desirable. The great mass of the people are in comfortable pecuniary circumstances. None are very rich—few are very poor. Probably there is no town of equal population in the world, where the inhabitants are more on an equality. They are remarkable for their temperance, and much is annually expended in relieving the poor. If the people are wanting in aught, it is perhaps in their appreciation of services rendered purely to the public, and not to party or sect. The two men who did the most for the manufactures of the town died in the poor house. Mr. Whiting, who gave a name to the place, has no stone to mark the spot of his interment; and the four men who fell at Lexington, boldly battling for freedom, when liberty was almost as hopeless as a dream, have no monument to their memory. Perhaps there is no greater injustice than that



men, who have employed their abilities for the benefit of mankind, and the attainment of honorable purposes, should be allowed to slumber in the dust of neglect; and that those should engross every mark of attention and every profitable trust, whose hearts never felt a throb of love for their native country, and whose deeds leave no inheritance to humanity.

Perhaps it will be an interesting curiosity to some to mention, that the descendants of several old families are still very numerous. The following are the principal names, with the number of legal voters:

Newhall, 82	Chase, 31	Mansfield, 21	Moulton, 15
Breed, 68	Phillips, 30	Rhodes, 20	Tarbox, 15
Johnson, 55	Ingalls, 27	Oliver, 18	Collins, 14
Alley, 48	Parrott, 26	Bachiler, 17	Mudge, 13
Lewis, 40	Stone, 26	Smith, 16	Perkins, 12
Brown, 33	Richardson, 24	Hawkes, 15	Fuller, 12

It would doubtless be gratifying to some of the early settlers, if they could return and witness the advancement which the town has made in the space of two hundred and fifteen years — to see the dark wilderness filled with the abodes of industry and happiness; and to behold Nahant, which was then 'the portion of foxes,' now annually visited by the best and fairest in the land.

Nahant has always been a place of interest to the lovers of natural scenery, and has long been visited in the summer season by parties of pleasure, who, when there were no hotels, cooked their chowders on the rocks. Few of the numerous visitors at Nahant have any idea of the place in its primitive simplicity thirty years since, when its advantages were known and appreciated by a limited number of the inhabitants of the city and neighboring towns. Accommodations for visitors were then circumscribed, and food not very abundant. A chicken knocked down by a fishing-pole in the morning, and cooked at dinner, served to increase the usual meal of fish, and was regarded as one of the luxuries of the place. But notwithstanding the inconveniences to which visitors were subjected, several families from Boston passed the whole summer in the close quarters of the village. The Hon. James T. Austin, the late William Sullivan, Hon. William Minot, Charles Bradbury, Esq., Rufus Amory, Esq., and Marshall Prince, were among those who early and annually visited the rock-bound peninsula with their families. At this time, Nahant did not boast of a house from Bass Beach round by East Point to Bass Rock. The whole of the space now dotted by luxurious cottages and cultivated soil, was a barren waste, covered by short brown grass, tenanted by grasshoppers and snakes. The straggler to East Point, Pulpit Rock, and

Swallows' Cave, found his path impeded by stone-walls — while the rest of the island, excepting the road through the village, was a *terra incognita* to all, save the old islanders and a few constant visitors. Subsequently, Rouillard opened a house in the village, which accommodated the numbers who were beginning to appreciate the beauties of the place. At this time, no artificial rules of society marred the comfort of the visitors. There was no dressing for dinners — no ceremonious calls. No belles brought a wardrobe, made up in the latest fashion of the day; and no beaux confined and cramped their limbs with tight coats, strapped pants, and high-heeled boots. Visitors shook off the restraints of society, and assimilated themselves in some degree to the rugged character of the scenery around them. Parties were frequently made, and whole days passed by them in the Swallows' Cave and on the adjacent rocks — the ladies with their sewing and books, while the men amused themselves in shooting or fishing, and the children in picking up pebbles and shells on the beaches. One of the first improvements made at Nahant, was a bathing-house at the southern extremity of Bass Beach, built under the direction of James Magee, Esq., whose name became associated with most of the early improvements. Since the citizens of Boston took Nahant into their patronage, its improvement has been rapid, and it now presents the appearance of a romantic town, sparkling in the ocean waves.

Among the benefactors of Nahant, no one is deserving of higher commendation than Frederic Tudor, Esq., who has built one of the most beautiful rustic cottages in the country, and has expended many thousand dollars to improve and beautify the place, by constructing side-walks, and planting several thousands of fruit and ornamental trees, both on his own grounds, and in the public walks. He has converted a barren hill into a garden, which has produced some of the richest and most delicious fruits and vegetables that have been presented at the horticultural exhibitions. Citizens of Boston who now have rural cottages at Nahant for their summer residences, are the following:

Hon. Thomas H. Perkins,	Frederic Tudor, Esq.,	Geo. Crowninshield, Esq.
" Edward H. Robbins,	Henry Codman, "	Joseph G. Joy, "
" Stephen Codman,	John A. Lowell, "	Mrs. John Phillips,
" William Prescott,	Samuel Hooper, "	" Gardner G. Greene,
" David Sears,	Benj. C. Clark, "	" John Hubbard,
" Benj. W. Crowninshield,	John E. Lodge, "	" Samuel Hammond,
" Samuel A. Eliot,	Thomas G. Cary, "	Francis Peabody, Esq. }
" Nathaniel P. Russell,	John H. Gray, "	Salem. }

There are three houses on Nahant for the accommodation of parties and boarders in the summer season — the Nahant Hotel,



kept by Mr. Phineas Drew; the Village Hotel, by Mr. Albert Whitney; and the Mansion Hotel, by Mr. Jesse Rice. The visiting season usually commences about the first of June, and continues four months. During that time, Nahant is thronged with visitors from all parts of America, and many from Europe. A summer residence at Nahant is regarded as a refined luxury. A ramble round the beaches, and among the coves and grottoes, is a delightful recreation; but it should be done thoroughly to be truly enjoyed. Those who drive over the middle road, and return in an hour, may possibly go away disappointed. Those who spend a few days, or a longer time, in examining the curiosities of the place, always express satisfaction and delight.

The Lynn Mineral Spring is a place of agreeable resort at all seasons of the year. It is in a highly picturesque and romantic spot, by the side of an extensive pond, or lake, surrounded by hills and wild woodlands. The first white man who selected this delightful retreat for his residence, was Caspar Van Crowninshield, Esq., a gentleman from Germany, ancestor of the respectable family of Crowninshields, of Boston. He built a cottage here about the year 1690, and several of the old apple-trees, planted by him, are still standing in the garden. A neat and commodious hotel is open here for the accommodation of boarders and visitors, kept by Mr. Otis King.

In 1836, a new place was found for the admiration of the lovers of sea-breezes and rural scenery, at the New Cove, Swampscot. In that year, a convenient house was erected by Mr. William Fenno, of Boston. It commands a fine view of the ocean and Nahant on one side, while on the other the land is clothed with the drapery of abundant foliage. It combines the advantages of fishing and bathing, with quiet retreat and cooling shade, and almost rivals Nahant in its attractions.

The opportunities for the sportsman are not so frequent nor so great as in the early days; still there are occasionally some fine chances among the birds. Mr. Ebenezer B. Phillips, of Swampscot, has killed forty-seven shags at one shot—that is, with a single and a double barrellled gun, fired in succession. He also killed, with one gun, twenty-seven black ducks, which he sold in Boston for twenty-four dollars.

The Lynn Hotel, situated on the crossing of several great roads, and in the midst of a pleasant neighborhood, forms a convenient and agreeable boarding place. The Saugus Hotel, two miles westward, in a thriving village, commands a beautiful view of variegated and picturesque scenery. Five miles northwest from the Lynn Depot, is the Lynnfield Hotel, kept by Mr. John Andrews. It is a pleasant seclusion from the noise and heat of the cities. The verdant forest, and the woodland lake, with its romantic island, will be appreciated by every lover of nature.

The inhabitants of Lynn, during two centuries, will not suffer in comparison with any equal number of people, in regard to morality and industry. For one hundred and seventy-nine years from the first settlement of the town, there was no lawyer in the place; and even now, with a population of about ten thousand, it supports only two. Though that profession is respectable, still it tells well for the honesty and accommodating disposition of the people, that they have conducted so large a portion of their affairs without recourse to law. They indulge somewhat too much in detraction; and there is, with many, too much fondness for excitement, and too great a love of change. I doubt if there be any more rational and solid piety and virtue among those who change their preachers every season, than there was when the minister remained forty or fifty years, and grew old and respected among the affections of his people. My own experience has taught me that teachers are changed quite too often for the benefit of scholars. It would be well, before worthy and devoted teachers are censured, that the inquiry be honestly made, whether the fault may not be with the children, perhaps with yourselves. And if the teacher be censurable, do not rush to the ward meeting, and turn him out, without notice; but inform him of your objections, and give him the opportunity for improvement. I never knew any people to suffer for rewarding merit; nor was any thing ever lost by candor, honesty, or benevolence. The spirit of improvement is evidently upward and onward; and people are beginning to find out, and to practice on the knowledge, that in educating the poor, in relieving the needy, and in elevating the miserable, they are consulting their own happiness. Truth dwells only in Love.

In preparing this book, I have endeavored to make it as correct as the nature of the case would admit, and in so doing, have been fortunate in obtaining the services of a good Overseer, Mr. Nathan Sawyer, and a first rate Proof Reader, Mr. George P. Oakes, who are employed in the establishment where the printing was executed. It is not impossible, however, that in such a multitude of facts and dates, a few errors may be found; but I have discovered none which are essential.



## PUBLIC OFFICERS.

---

### REPRESENTATIVES OF LYNN.

1634. May 14.	Nathaniel Turner, Thomas Willis, Edward Tomlins.	1649 to 1653.	Thomas Loughton.
1635. March 4.	Nathaniel Turner, Timothy Tomlins.	1654.	James Axey.
May 6.	Nathaniel Turner, Thomas Smith.	1655.	John Fuller, Thomas Loughton.
Sept. 2.	Nathaniel Turner, Edward Tomlins, Thomas Stanley.	1656 to 1658.	Thomas Loughton.
1636. March 3.	Nathaniel Turner, William Wood.	1659.	Thomas Marshall.
May 25.	Nathaniel Turner, Daniel Howe.	1660. May 30. Dec. 19.	Thomas Marshall. Thomas Marshall, Oliver Purchis.
Sept. 8.	Timothy Tomlins, Daniel Howe.	1661.	Thomas Loughton.
1637. April 18.	Timothy Tomlins, Daniel Howe.	1662.	None.
1638. March 12.	Timothy Tomlins, Edward Howe.	1663.	Thomas Marshall.
1639. March 13.	Timothy Tomlins, Edward Howe.	1664. May 18. August 3.	Thomas Marshall. John Fuller.
May 22.	Timothy Tomlins, Edward Holyoke.	1665 to 1667.	Oliver Purchis.
Sept. 4.	Edward Tomlins, Edward Holyoke.	1668.	Thomas Marshall.
1640. May 13.	Timothy Tomlins, Richard Walker.	1669 to 1673.	Oliver Purchis.
Oct. 7.	Timothy Tomlins, Edward Holyoke.	1674 to 1678.	John Fuller.
1641. June 2.	Edward Holyoke, Richard Walker.	1679.	Richard Walker.
Oct. 7.	Edward Holyoke, Nicholas Browne.	1680 to 1683.	Andrew Mansfield.
1642.	Edward Holyoke.	1684 to 1686.	Oliver Purchis.
1643.	Edward Holyoke, Edward Tomlins.	1687 to 1688.	None.
1644.	Robert Bridges, Edward Tomlins.	1689.	Rev. Jeremiah Shepard,
1645.	Robert Bridges.	1690.	Capt. Oliver Purchis.
1646.	Robt. Bridges, <i>Speaker</i> . Thomas Loughton.	1691.	None.
1647.	Edward Holyoke.	1692.	John Burrill, Jr.
1648.	Thomas Loughton, Edward Holyoke.		John Burrill, Sen., John Burrill, Jr.
			'But one to serve at a time.'
		1693 to 1696.	John Burrill, Jr.
		1697.	John Burrill, Sen.
		1698 to 1701.	John Burrill, Jr.
		1702.	John Person.
		1703. March 1. May 13.	John Person. Samuel Johnson.
		1704.	John Burrill, Jr.
		1705.	Joseph Newhall.
		1706.	John Pool.
		1707.	Jno. Burrill, Jr., <i>Speaker</i> .
		1708.	Samuel Johnson.
		1709.	Jno. Burrill, Jr., <i>Speaker</i> .
		1710.	John Person.
		1711 to 1719.	John Burrill, Jr.
		1720 to 1724.	Richard Johnson.
		1725.	Ebenezer Burrill.
		1726 to 1727.	Thomas Cheever.
		1728 to 1730.	Ebenezer Burrill.

1731. May 17.	Ebenezer Burrill.
June 4.	Richard Johnson.
1732.	Richard Johnson.
1733 to 1739.	William Collins.
1740 to 1742.	Thomas Cheever.
1743 to 1745.	William Collins.
1746.	Ebenezer Burrill.
1747 to 1748.	William Collins.
1749 to 1750.	Benjamin Newhall.
1751.	None.
1752 to 1756.	Benjamin Newhall.
1757.	William Collins.
1758 to 1762.	Benjamin Newhall.
1763.	William Collins.
1764 to 1773.	Ebenezer Burrill.
1774. May 19.	Ebenezer Burrill.
Oct. 17.	Ebenezer Burrill,
	John Mansfield.
1775. Feb. 1.	John Mansfield.
May 31.	Nathaniel Bancroft.
July 12.	Edward Johnson.
1776 to 1777.	Edward Johnson.
1778.	Holton Johnson.
1779. May 12.	Holton Johnson.
August 2.	Samuel Burrill.
1780 to 1781.	Samuel Burrill.
1782.	Holton Johnson.
1783.	Samuel Burrill.
1784 to 1790.	John Carnes.
1791 to 1793.	Ezra Collins.
1794 to 1795.	John Carnes.
1796 to 1802.	James Robinson.
1803.	Abner Cheever.
1804 to 1805.	Joseph Fuller, 3d.

Since this time, the town has usually sent from four to six annually; making quite too long a list for my pages.

#### CLERKS OF THE WRITS.

1640.	Richard Sadler.
1643.	Edward Tomlins.
1645.	Edward Burcham.
1655.	William Longley.
1662.	John Fuller.

#### TOWN CLERKS.

1666.	Andrew Mansfield.
1672.	Thomas Loughton.
1686.	Oliver Purchis.
1691.	John Burrill.
1722.	Richard Johnson.
1749.	John Fuller.
1755.	Joseph Fuller.
1756.	Ebenezer Burrill.
1765.	Dr. Nathaniel Henchman.
1767.	Ebenezer Burrill.
1775.	Benjamin Newhall.
1777.	William Collins.

1784.	Benjamin Johnson.
1785.	William Collins.
1786.	Ephraim Breed.
1804.	Henry Hallowell.
1820.	Samuel Hallowell.
1831.	Thomas Bowler.

#### ASSISTANTS.

1634 to 1641.	John Humfrey.
1646 to 1656.	Robert Bridges.

#### COUNCILLORS.

1721.	John Burrill.
1731 to 1746.	Ebenezer Burrill.
1827 to 1828.	Ezra Mudge.

#### SENATORS.

1812.	Joseph Fuller.
1823 — 1824.	Aaron Lummus.
1832 — 1833.	Josiah Newhall.
1834 — 1836.	Stephen Oliver.
1839.	Isaiah Breed.
1844.	Francis S. Newhall.

#### MINISTERS.

##### FIRST CONGREGATIONAL.

1632.	Stephen Bachiler.
1636.	Samuel Whiting.
1637.	Thomas Cobbet.
1650.	Jeremiah Shepard.
1650.	Joseph Whiting.
1720.	Nathaniel Henchman.
1763.	John Treadwell.
1784.	Obadiah Parsons.
1794.	Thomas Cushing Thacher.
1813.	Isaac Hurd.
1818.	Otis Rockwood.
1832.	David Peabody.
1836.	Parsons Cooke.

##### SECOND CONGREGATIONAL.

1824.	James Diman Greene.
1829.	David H. Barlow.
1833.	Samuel D. Robbins.
1840.	William Gray Swett.
1843.	John Pierpont, Jr.

#### BAPTIST.

1816.	George Phippen.
1820.	Ebenezer Nelson.
1829.	Daniel Chessman.



1833. L. Stillman Bolles.  
 1837. Joel S. Bacon.  
 1840. Hiram Graves.  
 1843. Thomas Driver.

## FIRST UNIVERSALIST.

1835. Josiah C. Waldo.  
 1839. Lemuel Willis.  
 1843. Horace G. Smith.

## SECOND UNIVERSALIST.

1836. Dunbar B. Harris.  
 1839. Edward N. Harris.  
 1840. Henry Jewell.  
 1843. John Nichols.

## CHRISTIAN.

1835. Philemon R. Russell.  
 1841. Josiah Knight.  
 1842. David Knowlton.  
 1842. Elihu Noyes.  
 1843. Warren Lincoln.

## EPISCOPAL.

1836. Milton Ward.  
 1837. George Waters.  
 1839. Frederic J. W. Pollard.  
 1841. William A. White.

## PHYSICIANS.

1680. Philip Read.  
 1685. John Henry Burchsted.  
 1720. Henry Burchsted.  
 1744. John Lewis.  
 1747. Nathaniel Henschman, Jr.  
 1769. John Flagg.  
 1771. Jonathan Norwood.  
 1775. John Perkins.  
 1779. Abijah Cheever.  
 1782. Aaron Lummus.  
 1792. James Gardner.  
 1798. Rufus L. Barrus.  
 1805. Peter G. Robbins.  
 1816. John Lummus.  
 1817. Edward L. Coffin.  
 1817. Richard Haseltine.  
 1828. William B. Brown.  
 1831. Charles O. Barker.  
 1832. William Prescott.  
 1835. Edward A. Kittredge.  
 1836. Abraham Gould.  
 1836. Silas Durkee.  
 1836. Daniel Perley.  
 1837. James Clark.  
 1837. Asa T. Newhall.  
 1842. Joseph M. Nye.  
 1843. William Read.  
 1843. Charles H. Nichols.  
 1843. John Phillips.

## LAWYERS.

1808. Benjamin Merrill.  
 1811. Joshua Prescott.  
 1812. Reuben P. Washburn.  
 1813. Robert W. Trevett.  
 1826. Isaac Gates.  
 1828. Jeremiah C. Stickney.  
 1837. Thomas B. Newhall.

## PRECEPTORS

## OF LYNN ACADEMY.

1805. William Ballard.  
 1805. Francis Moore.  
 1806. Hosea Hildreth.  
 1807. Abiel Chandler.  
 1807. Abner Loring.  
 1808. Samuel Newhall.  
 1809. Proctor Pierce.  
 1811. Joseph Wardwell.  
 1812. Solomon S. Whipple.  
 1815. John Flagg Gardner.  
 1817. Amos Rhodes.  
 1819. Benjamin P. Emerson.  
 1823. Alonzo Lewis.  
 1825. Ripley P. Adams.  
 1827. George Delavan.  
 1829. Joseph H. Towne.  
 1830. Samuel Lamson.  
 1835. Ephraim Ward.  
 1835. Jacob Batchelder.

## POSTMASTERS.

1795. James Robinson.  
 1802. Ezra Hitchings.  
 1803. Samuel Mulliken.  
 1807. Elijah Downing.  
 1808. Jonathan Bacheller.  
 1829. Jeremiah C. Stickney.  
 1839. Thomas J. Marsh.  
 1841. Stephen Oliver.  
 1842. Thomas B. Newhall.  
 1843. Benjamin Mudge.

## JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

Aaron Lummus,  
 Thomas B. Newhall,  
 Jeremiah C. Stickney,  
 George Johnson,  
 Thomas J. Marsh,  
 Edward S. Davis,  
 Benjamin Mudge,  
 Francis S. Newhall,  
 Daniel Perley,  
 Oliver B. Coolidge,  
 Asa T. Newhall,  
 Alonzo Lewis.

## SOLDIERS OF THE REVOLUTION.

## COLONELS.

John Mansfield,.....1775  
Ezra Newhall,.....1776

## CAPTAINS.

Eleazer Lindsey,  
Daniel Galeucia,  
Joseph Stocker.

## LIEUTENANTS.

Frederic Breed,  
John Batts,  
Harris Chadwell,  
Edward Johnson, Jr.  
John Upton.

## SERJEANTS.

John Hart,  
Ebenezer Mansfield,  
Henry Roby,  
Ebenezer Stocker,  
Edward Thompson:

## CORPORALS.

Abijah Cheever,  
Joshua Danforth,  
Michael Drake,  
William Hill,  
David Newman.

## PRIVATEs.

Ephraim Alley,  
Joseph Alley,  
Nathan Alley,  
Thomas Atwill,  
William Atwill,  
Zachariah Atwill,  
James Bacheller,  
Aaron Bailey,  
John Baker,  
Thomas Barry,  
Abel Belknap,  
Abraham Belknap,  
John Blanchard,  
Benjamin Bowdoin,  
Francis Bowdoin,  
Edward Bowen,  
Aaron Breed,  
Amos Breed,  
Ephraim Breed,  
Benjamin Brown,  
Joshua Burnham,  
Alden Burrill,  
Ebenezer Burrill,  
John Burrage,  
Garland Chamberlain,  
Israel Cheever,  
Thomas Cheever,  
Thomas Cheever, Jr.  
Stephen Coats,  
Nathaniel Cushing,

Jacob Davis,  
David Dunn,  
Oliver Dunnell,  
Reuben Dunnell,  
John Farrington,  
Joseph Farrington,  
Theophilus Farrington,  
Theophilus Farrington, Jr.  
William Farrington,  
Joseph Felt,  
Charles Florence,  
Thomas Florence,  
William Gill,  
Edward Hallowell,  
Henry Hallowell,  
Samuel Hallowell,  
Theophilus Hallowell,  
Ebenezer Hart,  
Peter Harris,  
Robert Hill,  
Nathan Hitchings,  
Thomas Hitchings,  
Ezekiel Howard,  
Benjamin Hudson,  
John Hunt,  
Daniel Ingalls,  
Jacob Ingalls,  
John Ingalls,  
Joseph Ingalls,  
Edward Ireson,  
John Ireson,  
Benjamin Jacobs,  
John Jacobs,  
Benjamin James,  
Edward Johnson,  
James Johnson,  
John Johnson,  
Enoch Jarvis,  
Benjamin Larrabee,  
Caleb Lewis,  
Blaney Lindsey,  
Daniel Lindsey,  
Joseph Lindsey,  
Joseph Lindsey, Jr.  
Ralph Lindsey,  
Ralph Lindsey, Jr.  
Joseph Lye,  
Daniel Mansfield,  
Robert Mansfield,  
Samuel Mansfield,  
Thomas Mansfield,  
William Mansfield,  
Josiah Martin,  
Benjamin Massey,  
Ezra Moulton,  
Enoch Mudge,  
Nathan Mudge,  
Samuel Mudge,  
Timothy Munroe,  
Allen Newhall,  
Asa Newhall,  
Benjamin Newhall,

Calley Newhall,  
Calvin Newhall,  
Charles Newhall,  
Daniel A. B. Newhall,  
Ebenezer Newhall,  
Jacob Newhall,  
James Newhall,  
James Newhall, Jr.  
Micajah Newhall,  
Nathan Newhall,  
Thomas Newman,  
Aaron Nourse,  
James Nourse,  
Isaac Orgin,  
Daniel Parrott,  
Marstin Parrott,  
Brinsley Peabody,  
Joseph Peach,  
Richard Pepoon,  
Ebenezer Porter,  
John Proctor,  
Joseph Proctor, Jr.  
James Ramsdell,  
James Ramsdell, Jr.  
Kimball Ramsdell,  
Shadrach Ramsdell,  
Silas Ramsdell,  
William Ramsdell,  
James Rich,  
Ebenezer Richardson,  
Eleazer Richardson,  
Solomon Richardson,  
Josiah Rhodes,  
John Rhodes,  
James Robinson,  
Thomas Roby,  
John Simms,  
Enoch Stocker,  
Baxter Tarbox,  
Benjamin Tarbox,  
Nathaniel Tarbox,  
William Tarbox,  
David Tufts,  
Edward Tuttle,  
Richard Tuttle,  
Samuel Tuttle,  
Ephraim Twist,  
Samuel Wait,  
Daniel Watts,  
William Watts,  
Jesse Whitman,  
John Willis,  
Daniel Williams,  
Ebenezer Williams,  
Joseph Williams,  
Henry Young. 168.

## KILLED AT LEXINGTON.

Abednego Ramsdell,  
William Flint,  
Thomas Hadley,  
Daniel Townsend.



## ORDER OF THIS HISTORY.

---

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. DESCRIPTION OF LYNN AND NAHANT,.....	19
II. HISTORY OF THE INDIANS,.....	986 to 1628... 39
III. SETTLEMENT OF LYNN,.....	1629 to 1631... 60
IV. CHARACTER AND RELIGION,.....	1632 to 1636... 77
V. LANDS DIVIDED,.....	1636 to 1642... 100
VI. IRON WORKS, AT LYNN,.....	1642 to 1656... 120
VII. DEXTER CLAIMS NAHANT,.....	1657 to 1687... 144
VIII. USURPATION OF ANDROS,.....	1688 to 1705... 171
IX. NAHANT AND WOODLANDS DIVIDED, .....	1706 to 1764... 185
X. TIME OF THE REVOLUTION,.....	1765 to 1783... 209
XI. REPUBLICAN HISTORY,.....	1784 to 1844... 222
XII. SHOEMAKING AT LYNN,.....	1844... 258

## DISTANCES FROM LYNN DEPOT, ETC.

---

	M.	R.
To Railroad House,.....	0	71
Post Office,.....	0	123
Western Depot,.....	0	282
Lynn Hotel,.....	1	77
Lynn Beach,.....	0	226
Whitney's Hotel,.....	4	
Nahant Hotel,.....	4	136
Swampscot Beach, .....	1	256
Fishing Point,.....	2	20
Ocean House,.....	2	271
Phillips's Point,.....	3	58
Lynn Dye House,.....	2	70
Mineral Spring Hotel,.....	2	194
Saugus Village,.....	2	220
Saugus Centre,.....	3	260
Lynnfield Hotel,.....	4	280
Salem,.....	5	96
Danvers,.....	5	80
Marblehead, .....	5	184
Boston,.....	10	170
The Common contains 21 acres—its length,.....	0	239
Length of Lynn Beach, entire,.....	2	
Nahant Beach,.....	0	170
Length of Streets, .....	34	16
Boundary Line,.....	33	118

---

ALONZO LEWIS practices SURVEYING, WRITING and DRAWING, and furnishes PLANS FOR HOUSES AND COTTAGES. For specimens of his work, he refers to the Maps of Lynn and Nahant; and to Dr. Kittredge's cottage, in Baltimore St., Mr. Sweetser's cottage, in Federal St., and Mr. Joy's log cabin, at Nahant.



# INDEX.

	Page		Page
Abousett River,.....	21, 44	Boiling Springs,.....	30
Academy,.....	231, 271	Boniface Burton,.....	59, 63
Aged People,.....	48, 59, 63, 67, 143, 183, 245	Boston,.....	20, 28, 51, 52, 53, 69, 74, 81, 85, 86, 92, 100, 109, 139, 142, 149, 153, 203, 208, 224, 259, 266.
Agriculture,.....	55	Botany,.....	35
Ahawayet, Indian Princess,.....	50, 51, 52	Boundary,.....	20
Alarms,.....	58, 76, 216, 238	Breed,.....	25, 63, 103, 106, 139, 251, 257
Alley,.....	110	Breed's End,.....	63
Andros, his usurpation,.....	171-180	Bridges,.....	21, 24, 29, 80, 109
Anecdotes, of John's Peril, 25; fever, 30; Sachem's bride, 48; man and bear, 73; woman and wolf, 73; beaver skins, 74; Dexter, 75; gunpowder, 79; girl, 80; marriage, 97; courtship, 111, 168; Mary Bowdwell, 115; ministers, 141; pirates, 146; apples and cider, 153; warning out, 185; wit, 205; boy, 206; rhyme, 208; soldiers, 215; Mather Byles, 217; guessing time, 219; Washington, 224.		Brooks,.....	84, 118
Animals,.....	55	Brook, Lord,.....	103, 105
Animal flower,.....	35	Burial ground,.....	235, 242, 243
Anti-slavery Society,.....	249	Burrill,.....	63, 197, 206
Appleton,.....	133, 159, 167	Bunker Hill,.....	28, 215
Architecture,.....	28, 70	Canker worms,.....	247
Artillery,.....	106, 233, 263	Castle Rock,.....	25, 32
Assistants,.....	110, 116, 270	Cattle,.....	61, 74, 86, 106, 138, 193, 201
Bachiler, Rev. S.....	78, 79, 81, 87, 93, 106	Caves,.....	22, 26
Ballad,.....	71	Census,.....	264
Balloon,.....	250, 252, 257	Character of first settlers,.....	77
Bancroft, Hon. George,.....	41, <i>note</i> .	Children, first born,.....	66, 78
Bank,.....	238	Christmas forbidden,.....	148
Baptists,.....	112, 119, 122, 130, 136, 153, 239, 250.	Church,.....	77, 219, 239, 251, 252
Barker, Dr. C. O. ....	256	Churches,.....	78, 87, 98, 149, 155, 224, 239, 241, 250, 263, 270.
Barlow, Rev. D. H. ....	247, 250	Clams,.....	185, 191
Bathing,.....	264	Clay,.....	23
Beaches,.....	27, 34, 38, 56, 83, 232, 252	Clerk of Writs,.....	114, 123, 125, 181, 270
Beacon,.....	247, 249	Cliffs,.....	21, 24, 27
Bear Pond,.....	29	Climate,.....	37, 263
Bears,.....	73	Clovenfoot rock,.....	29
Belles of the Forest,.....	50	Coats, Robert,.....	155, 173
Birds,.....	21, 35, 56, 58, 186, 187, 267	Cobbett, Rev. Thomas,.....	101, 105, 123, 124, 140, 153.
Blacksmith,.....	90, 118	Cobler, Simple,.....	129
Black Will,.....	27, 51, 80, 83	Coffin, Joshua,.....	58, <i>note</i> .
		Cold,.....	36, 71, 106, 118, 186, 201, 203, 224, 225, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 249, 251, 256, 257.
		Collins,.....	6, 89
		Comet,.....	152, 166, 234, 243, 250, 256
		Commissioners,.....	125, 126, 153

- Cordwainers, .....259, 260  
 Corn, .....70, 71, 74, 79, 84, 106, 114, 131,  
     132, 133, 139, 159, 186, 198, 203.  
 Cottages at Nahant, .....266  
 Councillors, .....270  
 Courts, .....72, 86, 97, 101, 148, 149, 152  
 Courtship, .....48, 111, 132, 133, 168  
 Cromwell, .....88, 91  
 Customs, .....219  
 Curtin, Enoch, .....255  
  
 Dagyr, John Adam, .....204  
 Dark day, .....217  
 Dexter, Thomas, .....64, 75, 80, 81, 105, 120,  
     130, 131, 144, 145, 159.  
 Drake, Samuel G. ....46, *note*.  
 Dread Ledge, .....28, 247, 249  
 Dress, Ladies', .....109, 137, 220  
 Drought, .....170, 203, 208  
 Drowned, .....202, 208, 210, 211, 224,  
     225, 226, 227, 230, 231, 234,  
     240, 241, 242, 244, 248, 252.  
 Dungeon Rock, .....148, 250  
  
 Early Settlers, .....60, 62, 77, 78  
 Early Voyages, .....40  
 Earthquakes, .....106, 109, 122, 149, 198, 199,  
     200, 202, 205, 218, 227, 231,  
     234, 238, 239, 248, 251.  
 Eclipse, .....231  
 Education, .....268, 170  
 Egg Rock, .....26, 28, 32  
 Embargo, .....232, 234  
  
 Fair, Ladies', .....252  
 Fairy Queen, .....49  
 Farmers, .....55, 61, 63, 69  
 Farrington, .....90, 139  
 Felt, Rev. Jos. B., .....53, *note*.  
 Fire engines, .....139, 263  
 Fires, .....65, 68, 114, 132, 200, 205, 226,  
     229, 233, 240, 250, 251, 257.  
 Fire Flies, .....35  
 Fish, .....35, 82, 83, 84, 109, 154  
 Fishery, .....263  
 Fishing Point, .....118  
 Flag, .....88, 167, 219  
 Flagg, Dr. John, .....225  
 Floating Bridge, .....29  
 Flora, .....245  
 Foxes, .....186, 198, 204  
 Freemasons, .....231, 243, 246  
 Freemen, .....72, 87  
 Friar of Lynn, .....102  
 Frosted Trees, .....245  
 Fuller, .....110, 247, 248  
 Furnaces, .....26, 120  
  
 Gardner, .....246, 249  
 Geology, .....30-35, 255  
 Girls lost, .....80, 118, 211  
 Gorges, Governor of Nahant, .....43  
 Graves End, .....65  
 Gray, William, .....243  
 Green, Rev. James D. ....242, 245  
 Groves, .....29  
 Grottoes, .....23, 26  
  
 Hair, long, .....133, 141  
 Harbor, .....21  
 Heat, .....234, 240  
 Heir of Linne, .....102  
 Henchman, Rev. N. ....196, 199, 202, 206  
 High Rock, .....28, 30, 251  
 Hills, .....28  
 Historical Society, .....7  
 History, .....7, 17  
 Home, .....8, 13  
 Houses, .....55, 70, 266  
 Humfrey, Hon. John, .....86, 88, 97, 101,  
     106, 112, 114, 115.  
 Hurd, Rev. Isaac, .....236, 239  
  
 Independence, .....232, 234, 244, 252, 257  
 INDIANS, .....11, 45-58, 72, 74, 76, 79, 100,  
     113, 119, 142, 156, 157, 158, 170,  
     177, 187, 198, 202, 241, 257  
 Infantry, .....263  
 Ingalls, .....60, 132  
 INHABITANTS, .....60, 62, 89, 103, 107,  
     110, 121, 133, 264.  
 Irene's Grotto, .....23  
 Iron Works, .....25, 65, 120, 123-133, 138,  
     139, 147, 148, 154, 159, 167.  
  
 Jenks, .....121, 130, 132, 138, 139, 148, 153  
 John's Peril, .....25  
 Johnson, .....90  
 Justices of the Peace, .....146, 271  
  
 Kertland, .....91, 104, 114  
  
 Labor, prices of, .....72  
 Ladies, their dresses, .....109, 137, 138, 220;  
     shoes, 221, 258; method of waking  
     them, 122.  
 Ladies' Fair, .....252  
 Lady Moody, .....112, 119, 131  
 Lady Humfrey, .....115  
 Lafayette, .....223, 242  
 Lakes of Lynn, .....19, 29  
 Lands divided, .....102, 149, 188  
 Lawyers, .....233, 271  
 Lewis, .....107, 108, 109, 175, 182, 196, 198,  
     200, 201, 215, 216, 218, 247, 252, 253.  
 Lexington, .....213, 221, 272  
 Library, .....239, 241  
 Lightning, .....204, 206, 228, 231, 233, 247  
 Lincoln, Earl of, .....115, 117  
 Lobster Rocks, .....26  
 Log cabin, .....255  
 Lover's Leap, .....28, 30, 252  
 Lummus, .....249, 252  
 Lyceum, .....245, 255  
 LYNN, its early history, 5; description  
     of, 18, 82, 137; map, 18, 20; pleasant  
     situation, 19; boundaries, 20; Indian  
     name, 21; geology, 30; settled, 60; in-  
     corporated, 72; deed, 76; health, 84;



- named, 101; granted more land, 105;  
market, 131; petitions of, 172, 176, 234;  
churches, 265; public men, 269.
- Lynnfield, . . . . . 20, 106, 191, 238
- Lynn Village, . . . . . 114, 123
- Manatahqua, Indian, . . . . . 50, 52
- Map of Lynn, . . . . . 18, 20, 247
- “ of Nahant, . . . . . 18, 20, 43
- Marblehead, . . . . . 48, 51, 52, 74
- Market, . . . . . 131
- Marriage, . . . . . 97, 146
- Marshall, Thomas, . . . . . 91, 106, 146, 148
- Marshes, . . . . . 33, 83, 255
- Mary's Grotto, . . . . . 26
- Masconomo, . . . . . 53, 75
- Meadows, . . . . . 34
- Meetinghouses, . . . . . 99, 137, 159, 166, 181, 187,  
192, 200, 202, 224, 231, 239,  
241, 244, 249, 250, 251, 252.
- Men lost, . . . . . 229
- Meteors, . . . . . 250
- Methodists, . . . . . 224, 235, 247
- Militia, . . . . . 73, 75, 79, 80, 81, 87, 100, 123,  
125, 126, 131, 146, 156, 167, 181,  
202, 206, 216, 234, 238, 263, 272.
- Mills, . . . . . 64, 67, 81, 82, 90, 92, 97,  
118, 130, 139, 249, 263.
- Mills, James, . . . . . 180
- Mineral Springs, . . . . . 29, 30, 234, 267
- Mines, . . . . . 25, 43, 65, 120
- Ministers, . . . . . 73, 270
- Mirage, . . . . . 35, 36
- Moodey, Lady, . . . . . 112, 119, 131
- Money, coined, 139; paper money, 216;  
old tenor, 196, 199.
- Montowampate, . . . . . 47, 48, 74, 75, 79, 85
- Morocco, . . . . . 260, 262
- Mother's affection, . . . . . 141
- Muminquash, . . . . . 51, 157
- NAHANT, map of, 18, 20; meaning of  
name, 21; description of, 21 to 27; ge-  
ology, 32; temperature, 37; storm at,  
38; its beauty, 40; Smith's descrip-  
tion, 43; granted to Robert Gorges,  
43; cattle kept there, 61; sheep pas-  
ture, 69; bear killed, 73; Sagamore  
killed, 80; Wood's description, 82;  
wolves there, 87; leased for fishing,  
87; rock mine, 125; mortgaged, 138;  
divided, 144, claimed by Thomas Dex-  
ter, 145; anecdote, 153; Robert Coats  
an inhabitant, 155; claimed by Dexter's  
heirs, 159; claimed by Edward Ran-  
dolph, 171; James Mills an inhabitant,  
180; iron mine, 181; claimed by Daf-  
fern, 185; foxes there, 186; divided  
again, 188; inhabitants, 193; houses,  
227, 239, 242, 266; sheep killed, 233;  
school-house, 239; hotel, 240; man kill-  
ed, 247; chapel, 249; improvements,  
265; cottages, 255, 266; hotels, 267;  
Little Nahant, 26, 31.
- Nahanton, Indian, . . . . . 52
- Nanapashemet, Sachem, . . . . . 45, 46
- Natural History Society, . . . . . 255
- Natural Bridge, . . . . . 24
- Newhall, . . . . . 66, 78, 104
- Newspapers, . . . . . 243, 247, 263
- Night arch, . . . . . 202, 210, 213, 244
- Nonupanohow, . . . . . 51, 52
- Northern Lights, 194, 199, 244, 245, 248, 250
- North Spring, . . . . . 29
- Packet, . . . . . 203
- Old Families, . . . . . 265
- Old oak, . . . . . 86
- Old style, . . . . . 17
- Olden time, . . . . . 8, 115, 219
- Old tenor, . . . . . 196, 199
- Pahpocksit, . . . . . 52
- Parsons, Rev. Obadiah, . . . . . 223, 225
- Pasaconaway, . . . . . 48
- Pea Island, . . . . . 23
- Peace, . . . . . 219, 238
- Peat meadows, . . . . . 34
- Peabody, Rev. David, . . . . . 249, 250
- Pequod war, . . . . . 100
- Perkins, . . . . . 205, 218, 239, 240, 266
- Petagoonaquah, . . . . . 50, 51
- Peters, Hugh, . . . . . 87, 88
- Petitions, . . . . . 125, 168, 171, 172, 175, 176
- Phenomena, . . . . . 36, 37, 248, 250
- Phillips, . . . . . 118, 135
- Physicians, . . . . . 166, 271
- Pierpont, Rev. John, jr., . . . . . 257
- Pirate's glen, . . . . . 29, 30, 146
- Pitcher, Molly, . . . . . 236
- Politics, . . . . . 222, 232
- Pometacom, . . . . . 156, 157
- Ponds, . . . . . 29
- Poor house, . . . . . 240
- Porphyry, . . . . . 30
- Postmasters, . . . . . 271
- Post Office, . . . . . 159, 225
- Potatoes, . . . . . 194
- Powder house, . . . . . 202, 230
- Poquanum, Sagamore, . . . . . 51, 80
- Preceptors, . . . . . 271
- Psalms, . . . . . 115
- Pulpit Rock, . . . . . 24, 32
- Pumpkins, . . . . . 70, 71
- Quakers, 148, 155, 159, 180, 184, 186, 205,  
241, 243, 244.
- Quanopkonat, . . . . . 53
- Quanapaug, . . . . . 157
- Quanapoliit, . . . . . 157
- Queakussen, . . . . . 51, 52
- Railroad, . . . . . 252, 253, 255, 256
- Randolph, claims Nahant, . . . . . 171
- Reading, . . . . . 20, 109, 114, 123, 139, 146, 159
- Records, . . . . . 103
- Rednap, Joseph, . . . . . 67, 87, 104
- Religion, . . . . . 77
- Representatives, . . . . . 86, 181, 269
- Revolutionary War, . . . . . 213, 221, 272

- Rifle Company,.....263  
 Roaring Cavern,.....24  
 Robbins, Hon. Edward H.,.....240, 266  
 Robbins, Rev. Samuel D.,.....250, 254  
 Roby, Rev. Joseph,.....204, 228  
 Rockwood, Rev. Otis,.....239, 249  
 Rocks,.....22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 28, 29, 41  
 Round Hill,.....29  
  
 Sagamores, 27, 46, 61, 74, 79, 85, 86, 137, 138  
 Sagamore Hill,.....28, 47, 68, 69, 146  
 Salem,.....20, 48, 51, 52, 61, 76, 78, 92, 97,  
     100, 114, 124, 153.  
 Sassacus,.....100  
 SAUGUS,.....20, 21, 80, 101, 238  
 Saugus River,.....21, 83, 109, 121, 132, 137  
 Savage Rock,.....41, 42  
 Savage, Hon. James,.....91, note.  
 Schools,.....226, 239, 264  
 Schoolmasters,.....170, 185, 187, 191, 192,  
     194, 196, 200, 204.  
 Scott, Sir Walter,.....105  
 Scythe,.....139  
 Sea Serpent,.....240  
 Selectmen,.....97, 159, 170, 175, 182, 204  
 Shark,.....247  
 Shepard, Rev. Jeremiah,.....166, 170, 179,  
     182, 184, 186, 187, 193, 195.  
 Ships built,.....198, 249  
 Shipwrecks,.....66, 74, 80, 146, 193, 201, 206,  
     209, 210, 225, 226, 227, 243,  
     244, 245, 246, 251, 252.  
 Shoes and Shoemakers,.....89, 91, 138, 186,  
     187, 204, 208, 258; tools, 257.  
 Simple Cobler,.....129  
 Slander,.....149  
 Slaves,.....13, 15, 217  
 Small pox,.....197, 249  
 Smith, John,.....42, 67  
 Snow,.....85, 106, 118, 192, 210, 211, 224, 228  
 Soil,.....36  
 Soldiers of the Revolution,.....213, 221, 272  
 Spouting Horn,.....25  
 Springs,.....29, 30, 65  
 Stage,.....207  
 Stamp act,.....209  
 Stocks,.....81  
 Storms,.....19, 35, 38, 89, 123, 131, 159, 192,  
     199, 201, 210, 228, 230, 234, 235, 238,  
     239, 241, 245, 246, 248, 254, 255, 256.  
 Sunrise on the Water,.....36  
 Swallows' Cave,.....22, 23  
 SWAMPSCOT,.....27, 28, 30, 80, 112, 114,  
     118, 148.  
 Swamps,.....34  
  
 Taxes,.....84, 132, 193, 264  
 Tea,.....194, 210, 211, 212  
 Temperance,.....243  
 Tempest,.....247  
 Thacher, Rev. T. C.,.....225, 235  
 Tides,.....247  
 Tontoquon,.....50  
 Tomlin's,.....67, 81, 97, 103, 114, 123  
 Town Clerks,.....105, 112, 114, 153, 270  
 Town House,.....238  
 Town Records,.....5  
 Towns settled by Lynn people. Sand-  
     wich, 101; Lynnfield, Hampton, 106;  
     Reading, South Reading, North Read-  
     ing, Barnstable, Yarmouth, 109; South-  
     ampton, Flushing, Gravesend, Jamaica,  
     Hempstead, Oyster Bay, 114; Amherst,  
     200; Saugus, 238.  
 Townsend,.....92, 104, 114  
 Treadwell, Rev. John,.....208, 213  
 Trees,.....20, 33, 35, 89, 245, 247, 257  
 Tudor, Frederic,.....242, 266  
 Turner, Nath'l.,.....67, 69  
 Turnpike,.....230  
  
 Universalists,.....251, 271  
  
 War,.....6, 46, 100, 156, 157, 177, 187,  
     205, 213, 226, 235.  
 Washington,.....219, 224, 226, 257  
 Webster, Daniel,.....97  
 Wedding,.....48, 138  
 Wenepoykin, Sagamore,.....47, 50, 86, 119,  
     138, 146, 156, 157.  
 Wenuchus,.....23, 48, 50, 76  
 Whale,.....205, 245  
 Whaling Company,.....249  
 Wheat,.....152  
 Whipping post,.....81  
 Whippoorwill,.....10, 19, 36  
 Whiting, Rev. Samuel,.....97, 105, 123, 150,  
     153, 158, 160.  
 Whitefield, Rev. George,.....202  
 Windmill,.....64, 97  
 Winthrop, Gov.,.....62, 74, 117, 118, 121, 123  
 Witchcraft,.....166, 182, 236  
 Witter, William,.....69, 122, 130, 136, 137  
 Wood End,.....61, 62  
 Woodlands,.....102, 188  
 Wood, William,.....21, 61, 82  
 Wolves,.....26, 73, 87, 186, 187, 204  
 Woman,.....109, 212, 220, 253  
 Wonohaquaham,.....47, 74, 75  
 Wuttanoh,.....50, 51  
 Wuttaquattinusk,.....50, 51  
  
 Yawata,.....23, 47, 51











LINN  
Massachusetts  
1629  
to  
1843.











# DATE DUE

MAR 30 2000  
OCT 11 1999

MAR 03 2005

MAY 11 2002  
FEB 17 2005

MAY 10 1997

Brigham Young University



BRIGHAM YOUNG UNIVERSITY



3 1197 21300 6890

